# Lecture Notes of Multivariate Statistics Lecture 01

Weizhong Zhang

School of Data Science, Fudan University

May 23, 2023

## 1 Review of Linear Algebra

**Theorem 1.1** (QR Factorization). Prove the following results for Gram-Schmidt orthogonalization

- 1.  $r_{jj} \neq 0 \text{ for all } i = 1, ..., n$
- 2.  $\|\mathbf{q}_i\|_2 = 1$  for all i = 1, ..., n
- 3.  $\mathbf{q}_i^{\mathsf{T}} \mathbf{q}_j = 0$  for all  $i = 1, \dots, n$  and j < i.

*Proof.* Part 1: Since each  $\mathbf{q}_i$  is a linear combination of  $\{\mathbf{a}_1, \dots, \mathbf{a}_i\}$ , the entry  $r_{jj}$  is zero means

$$r_{jj} = \left\| \mathbf{a}_j - \sum_{i=1}^{j-1} r_{ij} \mathbf{q}_i \right\|_2 = 0,$$

then  $\mathbf{a}_j$  must be a linear combination of  $\{\mathbf{a}_1, \cdots, \mathbf{a}_{j-1}\}$ , which validates the full rank assumption on  $\mathbf{A}$ .

**Part 2:** Just use the expression of  $r_{ij}$ .

**Part 3:** Recall that  $r_{ij} = \mathbf{q}_i^{\mathsf{T}} \mathbf{a}_j$  for any  $i \neq j$ . We can verify

$$\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} \mathbf{q}_2 = \frac{\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} (\mathbf{a}_2 - r_{12} \mathbf{q}_1)}{r_{22}} = \frac{\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} (\mathbf{a}_2 - (\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} \mathbf{a}_2) \mathbf{q}_1)}{r_{22}} = \frac{\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} \mathbf{a}_2 - (\mathbf{q}_1^{\top} \mathbf{a}_2) \mathbf{q}_1^{\top} \mathbf{q}_1}{r_{22}} = 0$$

Suppose for  $\mathbf{q}_i^{\top} \mathbf{q}_j = 0$  for all  $\mathbf{q}_i^{\top} \mathbf{q}_j = 0$  for all  $i = 1, \dots, n' - 1$  and j < i. Then for all  $k = 1, 2, \dots, n' - 1$ , we have

$$\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{q}_{n'} = \frac{\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{a}_{n'} - \sum_{i=1}^{n'-1} r_{in'}\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{q}_{i}}{r_{n'n'}} = \frac{\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{a}_{n'} - r_{kn'}\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{q}_{k}}{r_{n'n'}} = \frac{\mathbf{q}_{k}^{\top}\mathbf{a}_{n'} - r_{kn'}}{r_{n'n'}} = 0$$

Then we prove the result by induction.

**Theorem 1.2.** *Prove*  $\|\mathbf{A}\|_{2} = \sigma_{1}$ .

*Proof.* Let  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{U} \mathbf{\Sigma} \mathbf{V}^{\top}$  be full SVD of  $\mathbf{A}$ . Then

$$\left\|\mathbf{A}\right\|_2 = \sup_{\left\|\mathbf{x}\right\|_2 = 1} \left\|\mathbf{A}\mathbf{x}\right\|_2 = \sup_{\left\|\mathbf{x}\right\|_2 = 1} \left\|\mathbf{U}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{V}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\right\|_2 = \sup_{\left\|\mathbf{x}\right\|_2 = 1} \left\|\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{V}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\right\|_2$$

Then let  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{V}^{\top}\mathbf{x}$ . Since  $\mathbf{V}$  is orthogonal matrix, we have  $\|\mathbf{y}\|_2 = \|\mathbf{V}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\|_2 = \|\mathbf{x}\|_2 = 1$ . Hence,

$$\sup_{\|\mathbf{x}\|_2=1} \|\mathbf{\Sigma}\mathbf{V}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\|_2 = \sup_{\|\mathbf{y}\|_2=1} \|\mathbf{\Sigma}\mathbf{y}\|_2 = \sup_{\|\mathbf{y}\|_2=1} \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^r (\sigma_i y_i)^2} \leq \sigma_1.$$

We attain the maximum by taking  $\mathbf{y} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ \vdots \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$  and the corresponding  $\mathbf{x}$  is  $\mathbf{V} \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ \vdots \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$ 

**Theorem 1.3** (Cholesky Factorization). The symmetric positive-definite matrix  $\mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$  has the decomposition of the form

$$\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{L}\mathbf{L}^{\mathsf{T}}$$

where  $\mathbf{L} \in \mathbb{R}^{\times n}$  is a lower triangular matrix with real and positive diagonal entries.

*Proof.* For n=1, it is trivial. Suppose it holds for n-1, then any  $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}} \in \mathbb{R}^{(n-1)\times (n-1)}$  can be written as

$$\widetilde{\mathbf{A}} = \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}\widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{\mathsf{T}}$$

where  $\widetilde{\mathbf{L}} \in \mathbb{R}^{(n-1)\times (n-1)}$  is a lower triangular matrix with real and positive diagonal entries. Consider the case of n such that

$$\mathbf{A} = \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{A}} & \mathbf{a} \\ \mathbf{a}^\top & \alpha \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^\top & \mathbf{a} \\ \mathbf{a}^\top & \alpha \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}, \quad \text{where } \mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{R}^{n-1}, \quad \alpha \in \mathbb{R}.$$

Let

$$\mathbf{L}_1 = \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-1} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & 1 \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}.$$

We have

$$\mathbf{L}_{1}^{-1}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{L}_{1}^{-\top} = \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-1} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}\widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{\top} & \mathbf{a} \\ \mathbf{a}^{\top} & \alpha \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-\top} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{b} \\ \mathbf{b}^{\top} & \alpha \end{bmatrix} \triangleq \mathbf{B} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n} \quad \text{where } \mathbf{b} \in \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-1}\mathbf{a} \in \mathbb{R}^{n-1}.$$

Let

$$\mathbf{L}_2 = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ -\mathbf{b}^\top & 1 \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}.$$

Then

$$\mathbf{L}_2^{-1}\mathbf{B}\mathbf{L}_2^{-\top} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ -\mathbf{b}^{\top} & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{b} \\ \mathbf{b}^{\top} & \alpha \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & -\mathbf{b} \\ \mathbf{0} & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \alpha - \mathbf{b}^{\top}\mathbf{b} \end{bmatrix}.$$

Since **A** is positive-definite, we have

$$\alpha - \mathbf{b}^{\mathsf{T}} \mathbf{b} = \alpha - \mathbf{a}^{\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-1} \mathbf{a} = \alpha - \mathbf{a}^{\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathbf{L}}^{-1} \mathbf{a} = \alpha - \mathbf{a}^{\mathsf{T}} \widetilde{\mathbf{A}}^{-1} \mathbf{a} > 0.$$

Let  $\alpha - \mathbf{b}^{\top} \mathbf{b} = \lambda^2$ , where  $\lambda > 0$ . Hence, we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \alpha - \mathbf{b}^{\top} \mathbf{b} \end{bmatrix} = \mathbf{L}_3 \mathbf{L}_3^{\top}, \quad \text{where } \mathbf{L}_3 = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \lambda \end{bmatrix}$$

which means  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{L}\mathbf{L}^{\top} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$  where  $\mathbf{L} = \mathbf{L}_1\mathbf{L}_2\mathbf{L}_3 \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times n}$  is a lower triangular matrix with real and positive diagonal entries.

**Theorem 1.4.** Suppose  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x})$  is continuous in an open neighborhood of  $\mathbf{x}^*$  and that  $\nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*) = \mathbf{0}$  and  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^*) \succ \mathbf{0}$ . Then  $\mathbf{x}^*$  is a strict local minimizer of f.

*Proof.* Because the Hessian is continuous and positive definite at  $x^*$ , we can choose a radius r > 0 so that  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x})$  remains positive definite for all  $\mathbf{x}$  in the open ball  $\mathcal{D} = \{\mathbf{z} : \|\mathbf{z} - \mathbf{x}^*\|_2 < r\}$ . Taking any nonzero vector  $\mathbf{p}$  with  $\|\mathbf{p}\|_2 < r$ , we have  $\mathbf{x}^* + \mathbf{p} \in \mathcal{D}$  and so

$$f(\mathbf{x}^* + \mathbf{p}) = f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \mathbf{p}^\top \nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{p}^\top \nabla^2 f(\mathbf{z}) \mathbf{p} = f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{p}^\top \nabla^2 f(\mathbf{z}) \mathbf{p},$$

where  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{x}^* + t\mathbf{p}$  for some  $t \in (0, 1)$ . Since  $\mathbf{z} \in \mathcal{D}$ , we have  $\mathbf{p}^\top \nabla^2 f(\mathbf{z}) \mathbf{p} > 0$ , and therefore  $f(\mathbf{x}^* + \mathbf{p}) > f(\mathbf{x}^*)$ , giving the result.

**Theorem 1.5.** Suppose  $\mathbf{x}^*$  is a local minimizer of twice differentiable  $f(\mathbf{x})$  and  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x})$  is continuous in an open neighborhood of  $\mathbf{x}^*$ , then  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^*) = \mathbf{0}$  and  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^*) \succeq \mathbf{0}$ .

*Proof.* Suppose for contradiction that  $\nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*) \neq \mathbf{0}$ . Define the vector  $p = -\nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*)$ , which leads to that  $\mathbf{p}^{\top} \nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*) < 0$ . Because  $\nabla f$  is continuous near  $\mathbf{x}^*$ , there is a scalar T > 0 such that

$$\mathbf{p}^{\top} \nabla f(\mathbf{x}^* + t\mathbf{p}) < 0,$$

for all for any  $t \in [0,T]$ . We have by Taylor's theorem that

$$f(\mathbf{x}^* + \bar{t}\mathbf{p}) = f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \bar{t}\mathbf{p}^{\top}\nabla f(x^* + t\mathbf{p}),$$

for some  $t \in (0, \bar{t})$ . Therefore,  $f(x^* + \bar{t}\mathbf{p}) < f(x^*)$  for all  $\bar{t} \in (0, T]$ . We have found a direction leading away from  $x^*$  along which f decreases, so  $x^*$  is not a local minimizer, and we have  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}) = \mathbf{0}$ .

For contradiction, assume that  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^*)$  is not positive semidefinite. Then we can choose a vector  $\mathbf{p}$  such that  $\mathbf{p}^\top \nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^*) \mathbf{p} < 0$ . Because  $\nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x})$  is continuous near  $\mathbf{x}^*$ , there is a scalar T > 0 such that

$$\mathbf{p}^{\top} \nabla^2 f(\mathbf{x}^* + t\mathbf{p}) \mathbf{p} < 0$$

for all  $t \in [0, T]$ . By doing a Taylor series expansion around  $x^*$ , we have for all  $\bar{t} \in (0, T]$  and some  $t \in (0, \bar{t})$  that

$$f(\mathbf{x}^* + \bar{t}\mathbf{p}) = f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \bar{t}\mathbf{p}^\top \nabla f(\mathbf{x}^*) + \frac{1}{2}\bar{t}^2\mathbf{p}^\top \nabla^2(\mathbf{x}^* + t\mathbf{p})\bar{t}^2\mathbf{p} < f(\mathbf{x}^*).$$

We have found a direction from  $\mathbf{x}^*$  along which f is decreasing, and so again,  $\mathbf{x}^*$  is not a local minimizer.  $\square$ 

**Theorem 1.6.** Given  $\mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{m \times n}$  and  $\mathbf{b} \in \mathbb{R}^m$ , the solution of minimization problem

$$\min_{\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{R}^n} f(\mathbf{x}) \triangleq \frac{1}{2} \left\| \mathbf{A} \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{b} \right\|_2^2.$$

is  $\hat{\mathbf{x}} = \mathbf{A}^{\dagger} \mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{A}^{\dagger} \mathbf{A}) \mathbf{y}$ , where  $\mathbf{y} \in \mathbb{R}^n$ 

*Proof.* The Hessian of  $f(\mathbf{x})$  is  $\mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \succeq \mathbf{0}$ , which means  $f(\mathbf{x})$  is convex. Let  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{U}_r \mathbf{\Sigma}_r \mathbf{V}_r^{\top}$  be the condense SVD, where r is the rank of  $\mathbf{A}$ . Since  $\nabla f(\mathbf{x}) = \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{b}$ , we only needs to solve the linear system

$$\mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0}.$$

We denote the solution of  $\mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0}$  be

$$\mathcal{X} = \{\mathbf{x} : \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0}\}.$$

We can verify that  $\hat{\mathbf{x}} = \mathbf{A}^{\dagger}\mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{A}^{\dagger}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{y}$  is the solution of the linear system because

$$\begin{split} &\mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\hat{\mathbf{x}} - \mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{b} \\ &= \mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\left(\mathbf{A}^{\dagger}\mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{A}^{\dagger}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{y}\right) - \mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{b} \\ &= \mathbf{A}^{\top}(\mathbf{A}\mathbf{A}^{\dagger} - \mathbf{I})\mathbf{b} + \mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\left(\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{A}^{\dagger}\mathbf{A}\right)\mathbf{y} \\ &= \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top}(\mathbf{U}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}^{-1}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top} - \mathbf{I})\mathbf{b} + \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top}\mathbf{U}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}^{-1}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top}\mathbf{U}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\right)\mathbf{y} \\ &= \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top}(\mathbf{U}_{r}\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top} - \mathbf{I})\mathbf{b} + \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}^{2}\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{V}_{r}\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\right)\mathbf{y} \\ &= \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}(\mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top} - \mathbf{U}_{r}^{\top})\mathbf{b} + \mathbf{V}_{r}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{r}^{2}\left(\mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top} - \mathbf{V}_{r}^{\top}\right)\mathbf{y} \\ &= \mathbf{0}. \end{split}$$

Hence, we have  $\mathcal{X}_1 \subseteq \mathcal{X}$ , where  $\mathcal{X}_1 = \{\mathbf{x} : \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{A}^{\dagger} \mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{A}^{\dagger} \mathbf{A}) \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{y} \in \mathbb{R}^n \}$ . We also have

$$\mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0}$$

$$\begin{split} &\Longleftrightarrow \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{\Sigma}_r^2 \mathbf{V}_r^\top \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{\Sigma}_r \mathbf{U}_r^\top \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0} \\ &\iff \mathbf{\Sigma}_r^2 \mathbf{V}_r^\top \mathbf{x} - \mathbf{\Sigma}_r \mathbf{U}_r^\top \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{0} \\ &\iff \mathbf{V}_r^\top \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{\Sigma}_r^{-1} \mathbf{U}_r^\top \mathbf{b} \\ &\iff \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{V}_r^\top \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{\Sigma}_r^{-1} \mathbf{U}_r^\top \mathbf{b} \\ &\iff \mathbf{x} - (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{V}_r^\top) \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{A}^\dagger \mathbf{b} \\ &\iff \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{A}^\dagger \mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{V}_r^\top) \mathbf{x} \end{split}$$

Hence, we have  $\mathcal{X} = \{\mathbf{x} : \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{A}^{\dagger} \mathbf{b} + (\mathbf{I} - \mathbf{V}_r \mathbf{V}_r^{\top}) \mathbf{x}\} \subseteq \mathcal{X}_1$ . In conclusion, we have  $\mathcal{X} = \mathcal{X}_1$ .

### 2 The Multivariate Normal Distributions

**Statistical Independence** If F(x,y) = F(x)G(y), we have

$$\begin{split} f(x,y) = & \frac{\partial^2 F(x,y)}{\partial x \partial y} = \frac{\partial^2 F(x) G(y)}{\partial x \partial y} \\ = & \frac{\mathrm{d} F(x)}{\mathrm{d} x} \frac{\mathrm{d} G(y)}{\mathrm{d} y} \\ = & f(x) g(y). \end{split}$$

If f(x,y) = f(x)g(y), we have

$$F(x,y) = \int_{-\infty}^{y} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f(u,v) du dv = \int_{-\infty}^{y} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f(u)g(v) du dv$$
$$= \int_{-\infty}^{y} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f(u,v) du dv = \int_{-\infty}^{x} f(u) du \int_{-\infty}^{y} g(v) dv$$
$$= F(x)G(y).$$

Uncorrelated does not means independent Let  $X \sim U(-1,1)$  and

$$Y = \begin{cases} X, & X > 0 \\ -X, & X \le 0 \end{cases}$$

Show X and Y are uncorrelated but they are NOT independent.

Conditional Distributions Let  $y_1 = y$ ,  $y_2 = y + \Delta$ . Then for a continuous density, the mean value theorem implies

$$\int_{y}^{y+\Delta y} g(v) \, \mathrm{d}v = g(y^*) \Delta y,$$

where  $y \leq y^* \leq y + \Delta y$ . We also have

$$\int_{y}^{y+\Delta y} f(u,v) \, \mathrm{d}v = f(u,y^*(u)) \Delta y,$$

where  $y \leq y^*(u) \leq y + \Delta y$ . Connecting above results to

$$\Pr\{x_1 \le X \le x_2 \mid y_1 \le Y \le y_2\} = \frac{\int_{x_1}^{x_2} \int_{y_1}^{y_2} f(u, v) \, dv \, du}{\int_{y_1}^{y_2} g(v) \, dv}$$

with  $y_1 = y$  and  $y_2 = y + \Delta y$ , we have

$$\Pr\{x_{1} \leq X \leq x_{2} \mid y \leq Y \leq y + \Delta y\} 
= \frac{\int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \int_{y}^{y + \Delta y} f(u, v) \, dv \, du}{\int_{y}^{y + \Delta y} g(v) \, dv} 
= \frac{\int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} f(u, y^{*}(u)) \Delta y \, du}{g(y^{*}) \Delta y} 
= \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \frac{f(u, y^{*}(u))}{g(y^{*})} \, du.$$
(1)

For y such that g(y) > 0, we define  $\Pr\{x_1 \le X \le x_2 \mid Y = y\}$ , the probability that X lies between  $x_1$  and  $x_2$ , given that Y is y, as the limit of (1) as  $\Delta y \to 0$ . Thus

$$\Pr\{x_1 \le X \le x_2 \mid Y = y\} = \int_{x_1}^{x_2} \frac{f(u, y)}{g(y)} du = \int_{x_1}^{x_2} f(u \mid y) du.$$
 (2)

**Transform of Variables** Let the density of  $X_1, \ldots, X_p$  be  $f(x_1, \ldots, x_p)$ . Consider the p real-valued functions  $\mathbf{u} : \mathbb{R}^p \to \mathbb{R}^p$  such that

$$y_i = u_i(x_1, \dots, x_p), \qquad i = 1, \dots, p.$$

Assume the transformation  $\mathbf{u}$  from the x-space to the y-space is one-to-one, then the inverse transformation is  $\mathbf{u}^{-1}$  such that

$$x_i = u_i^{-1}(y_1, \dots, y_p), \qquad i = 1, \dots, p.$$

Let the random variables  $Y_1, \ldots, Y_p$  be defined by

$$Y_i = u_i(X_1, \dots, X_p), \qquad i = 1, \dots, p,$$

and the density of  $Y_1, \ldots, Y_p$  be  $g(\mathbf{y})$ . Then we have

$$\int_{\mathbf{u}(\Omega)} g(\mathbf{y}) d\mathbf{y} = \int_{\Omega} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})) \operatorname{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x})|) d\mathbf{x},$$
(3)

and

$$f(\mathbf{x}) = g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})) \operatorname{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x})|), \tag{4}$$

where the Jacobin matrix is

$$\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x}) = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x_1} & \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x_2} & \dots & \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x_p} \\ \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial x_1} & \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial x_2} & \dots & \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial x_p} \\ \vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\ \frac{\partial u_p}{\partial x_1} & \frac{\partial u_p}{\partial x_2} & \dots & \frac{\partial u_p}{\partial x_p} \end{bmatrix}.$$

A roughly proof for above results:

• If  $\mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  and  $\mathcal{S} \subset \mathbb{R}^p$  is a measurable set, then  $m(\mathbf{A}\mathcal{S}) = |\det(\mathbf{A})|m(\mathcal{S})$ . Let  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{U}\mathbf{\Sigma}\mathbf{V}^{\top}$  where  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  are orthogonal and  $\mathbf{\Sigma}$  is diagonal with nonnegative entries. Multiplying by  $\mathbf{V}^{\top}$  doesn't change the measure of  $\mathcal{S}$ . Multiplying by  $\mathbf{\Sigma}$  scales along each axis, so the measure gets multiplied by  $|\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})| = |\det(\mathbf{A})|$ . Multiplying by  $\mathbf{U}$  doesn't change the measure.

• We consider the probability of  $\mathbf{x}$  in  $\Omega$  and  $\mathbf{y}$  in  $\mathbf{u}(\Omega)$ ; and partition  $\Omega$  into  $\{\Omega_i\}_i$ . Then

$$\int_{\mathbf{u}(\Omega)} g(\mathbf{y}) d\mathbf{y}$$

$$= \sum_{i} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}_{i})) m(\mathbf{u}(\Omega_{i}))$$

$$\approx \sum_{i} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}_{i})) m(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}_{i}) + \mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x}_{i})(\Omega_{i} - \mathbf{x}_{i}))$$

$$= \sum_{i} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}_{i})) m(\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x}_{i})\Omega_{i})$$

$$= \sum_{i} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}_{i})) \operatorname{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x}_{i})|) m(\Omega_{i})$$

$$\approx \int_{\Omega} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})) \operatorname{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x})|) d\mathbf{x}.$$

• Consider notation  $\Omega$  such that

$$\int_{\Omega} = \int_{x_1}^{x_1'} \dots \int_{x_p}^{x_p'}$$

where  $x_1 \leq x_1', x_2 \leq x_2', \dots, x_p \leq x_p'$ . Then the notation  $\mathbf{u}(\Omega)$  in the integral should consider the order

$$\int_{\mathbf{u}(\Omega)} = \int_{\min\{u_1(x_1), u_1(x_1')\}}^{\max\{u_1(x_1), u_1(x_1')\}} \dots \int_{\min\{u_p(x_p), u_p(x_p')\}}^{\max\{u_p(x_p), u_p(x_p')\}}$$

By using even tinier subsets  $\Omega_i$ , the approximation would be even better so we see by a limiting argument that we actually obtain (3). On the other hand, we have (f is density functions of **x** on  $\Omega$ ; g is density function of **y** on  $\mathbf{u}(\Omega)$ ;  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})$  means **x** and  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})$  are one-to-one mapping).

$$\int_{\Omega} f(\mathbf{x}) \mathrm{d}\mathbf{x} = \int_{\mathbf{u}(\Omega)} g(\mathbf{y}) \mathrm{d}\mathbf{y} = \int_{\Omega} g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})) \mathrm{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x})|) \mathrm{d}\mathbf{x}.$$

Since it holds for any  $\Omega$ , then

$$f(\mathbf{x}) = g(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})) \operatorname{abs}(|\mathbf{J}(\mathbf{x})|).$$

**Lemma 2.1.** If **Z** is an  $m \times n$  random matrix, **D** is an  $l \times m$  real matrix, **E** is an  $n \times q$  real matrix, and **F** is an  $l \times q$  real matrix, then

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{DZE} + \mathbf{F}] = \mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{Z}]\mathbf{E} + \mathbf{F}.$$

*Proof.* The element in the *i*-th row and *j*-th column of  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{DZE} + \mathbf{F}]$  is

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{h,g} d_{ih} z_{hg} e_{gj} + f_{ij}\right] = \sum_{h,g} d_{ih} \mathbb{E}[z_{hg}] e_{gj} + f_{ij}$$

which is the element in the *i*-th row and *j*-th column of  $\mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{Z}]\mathbf{E} + \mathbf{F}$ .

**Lemma 2.2.** If  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{f} \in \mathbb{R}^l$ , where  $\mathbf{D}$  is an  $l \times m$  real matrix,  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbb{R}^m$  is a random vector, then

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] = \mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] + \mathbf{f} \quad and \quad \text{Cov}[\mathbf{y}] = \mathbf{D}\text{Cov}[\mathbf{x}]\mathbf{D}^{\top}.$$

*Proof.* We have

$$\begin{aligned} &\operatorname{Cov}(\mathbf{y}) \\ =& \mathbb{E}\left[ (\mathbf{y} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}])(\mathbf{y} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}])^{\top} \right] \\ =& \mathbb{E}\left[ (\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{f} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] + \mathbf{f}])(\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{f} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] + \mathbf{f}])^{\top} \right] \\ =& \mathbb{E}[(\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])(\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])^{\top}] \\ =& \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{D}(\mathbf{x} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])(\mathbf{x} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])^{\top}\mathbf{D}^{\top}] \\ =& \mathbf{D}\mathbb{E}[(\mathbf{x} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])(\mathbf{x} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}])^{\top}]\mathbf{D}^{\top} \\ =& \mathbf{D}\operatorname{Cov}[\mathbf{x}]\mathbf{D}^{\top}. \end{aligned}$$

The Density Function of Multivariate Normal Distribution Let the spectral decomposition of A be  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{U}\boldsymbol{\Lambda}\mathbf{U}^{\top}$ , then we take  $\mathbf{C} = \mathbf{U}\boldsymbol{\Lambda}^{-1/2}$  and it satisfies  $\mathbf{C}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{C} = \mathbf{I}$  and  $\mathbf{C}$  is non-singular. Define  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}(\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{b})$ , then

$$K^{-1} = \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{b})^{\top} \mathbf{A}(\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{b})\right) dx_{1} \dots dx_{p}$$

$$= \frac{1}{\det(\mathbf{C}^{-1})} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{y}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{C}) \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{n} y_{i}^{2}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{A}^{-\frac{1}{2}}) \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_{p}^{2}\right) \dots \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_{1}^{2}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{A}^{-\frac{1}{2}})(2\pi)^{\frac{p}{2}}.$$

Directly consider the expectation and variance of  $\mathbf{x}$  is not easy, so we first consider the ones of  $\mathbf{y}$ . The relation  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}(\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{b})$  means  $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{b}$  and  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] = \mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] + \mathbf{b}$ . The transformation implies the density function of  $\mathbf{y}$  is

$$g(\mathbf{y}) = \det(\mathbf{C})K \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{b} - \mathbf{b})^{\top} \mathbf{A}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{b} - \mathbf{b})\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{C})K \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{C}\mathbf{y}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= K \det(\mathbf{C}) \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{y}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \frac{\det(\mathbf{C})}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^{p} \det(\mathbf{A})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p} y_{i}^{2}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}$$

$$= \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p} y_{i}^{2}\right) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p}.$$

Then for each  $i = 1, \ldots, p$ , we have

$$\mathbb{E}[y_i] = \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^p y_j^2\right) dy_1 \dots dy_p$$
$$= \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_i^2\right) dy_i\right) \prod_{j=1}^p \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_j^2\right) dy_j$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_i^2\right) dy_i = 0.$$

Thus  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] = \mathbf{0}$  and  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] = \mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] + \mathbf{b} = \boldsymbol{\mu}$  implies  $\mathbf{b} = \boldsymbol{\mu}$ . The relation  $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{b}$  means  $\text{Cov}[\mathbf{x}] = \mathbf{C}\text{Cov}[\mathbf{y}]\mathbf{C}^{\top} = \mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}\mathbf{y}^{\top}]\mathbf{C}^{\top}$ . For each  $i \neq j$ , we have

$$\begin{split} &= \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i y_j \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{h=1}^p y_h^2\right) \mathrm{d}y_1 \dots \mathrm{d}y_p \\ &= \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_i^2\right) \mathrm{d}y_i\right) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_j \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_j^2\right) \mathrm{d}y_j\right) \prod_{j=1, h \neq i, j}^p \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_h^2\right) \mathrm{d}y_h \\ &= 0 \end{split}$$

We also have

$$\mathbb{E}[y_i^2] = \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i^2 \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \sum_{h=1}^p y_h^2\right) dy_1 \dots dy_p$$

$$= \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i^2 \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_i^2\right) dy_i\right) \prod_{i=1}^p \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_h^2\right) dy_h = 1,$$

where the last step is due to

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_h^2\right) \, \mathrm{d}y_h$$

corresponds to the pdf of  $y_h \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$  and

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_i^2 \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_i^2\right) \, \mathrm{d}y_i$$

corresponds to the variance of  $y_i \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$ . Hence, it holds that

$$\mathbb{E}[(y_i - \mathbb{E}[y_i])(y_j - \mathbb{E}[y_j])] = \begin{cases} 0, & i \neq j, \\ 1, & i = j. \end{cases}$$

which implies  $\Sigma = \text{Cov}[\mathbf{x}] = \mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}\mathbf{y}^{\top}]\mathbf{C}^{\top} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{C}^{\top}$ . Since  $\mathbf{C}^{\top}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{C} = \mathbf{I}$ , we obtain  $\mathbf{A}^{-1} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{C}^{\top}$  and  $\Sigma = \mathbf{A}^{-1} \succ \mathbf{0}.$ 

**Theorem 2.1.** Let  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , with  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \succ \mathbf{0}$ . Then

$$\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{x}$$

is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu},\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{C}^\top)$  for non-singular  $\mathbf{C} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$ .

*Proof.* Let f(x) be the density of **x** such that

$$f(\mathbf{x}) = n(\mu \mid \mathbf{\Sigma}) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^p \det(\mathbf{\Sigma})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^\top \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}(\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu})\right)$$

and  $g(\mathbf{y})$  be the density function of  $\mathbf{y}$ . The relation  $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{y}$  implies  $g(\mathbf{y}) = f(\mathbf{u}^{-1}(\mathbf{y}))|\det(\mathbf{J}^{-1}(\mathbf{y}))|$  with  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}) = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{x}, \ \mathbf{u}^{-1}(\mathbf{y}) = \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{y} \text{ and } \mathbf{J}^{-1}(\mathbf{y}) = \mathbf{C}^{-1}.$  Hence, we have

$$g(\mathbf{y})$$

$$\begin{aligned} &= f(\mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{y})|\det(\mathbf{C}^{-1})| \\ &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^p \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^\top \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}(\mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - \boldsymbol{\mu})\right) |\det(\mathbf{C}^{-1})| \\ &= \frac{|\det(\mathbf{C}^{-1})|}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^p \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu})^\top \mathbf{C}^{-\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{C}^{-1}(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu})\right) \\ &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^p \det(\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\mathbf{C}^\top)}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu})^\top (\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\mathbf{C}^\top)^{-1} (\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu})\right) \\ &= n(\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\mu} \mid \mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\mathbf{C}^\top), \end{aligned}$$

where we use the fact

$$\frac{|\det(\mathbf{C}^{-1})|}{\sqrt{\det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{|\det(\mathbf{C})|^2\det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{|\det(\mathbf{C})|\det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})|\det(\mathbf{C}^\top)|}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{|\det(\mathbf{C}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{C}^\top)|}}.$$

**Theorem 2.2.** If  $\mathbf{x} = [x_1, \dots, x_p]^{\top}$  have a joint normal distribution. Let

1. 
$$\mathbf{x}^{(1)} = [x_1, \dots, x_q]^{\top},$$

$$2. \ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} = [x_{q+1}, \dots, x_p]^{\top}.$$

for q < p. A necessary and sufficient condition for  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  and  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  to be independent is that each covariance of a variable from  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  and a variable from  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  is 0.

Proof. Let

$$\mathbf{x} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}), \quad \text{where } \boldsymbol{\mu} = \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} \\ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } \boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12} \\ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix}$$

such that

- $\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(1)}\right]$ ,
- $\bullet \ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right],$
- $\bullet \ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} = \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}\right)^{\top}\right],$
- $\bullet \ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} = \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\right)^{\top}\right],$
- $\bullet \ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12} = \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21}^\top = \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\right)^\top\right].$

Sufficiency (uncorrelated  $\Longrightarrow$  independent): The random vectors  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  and  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  are uncorrelated means

$$\mathbf{\Sigma} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{11} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix} \quad ext{and} \quad \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{11}^{-1} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1} \end{bmatrix}.$$

The quadratic form of  $n(\mathbf{x} \mid \boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  is

$$\begin{split} & (\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \\ &= \left[ (\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)})^{\top} \quad (\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})^{\top} \right] \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11}^{-1} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \\ &= (\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}) + (\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}) \end{split}$$

and we have  $\det(\Sigma) = \det(\Sigma_{11}) \det(\Sigma_{22})$ . Then

$$n(\boldsymbol{\mu} \mid \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^p \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^\top \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}(\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu})\right)$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^q \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)})^\top \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)})\right)$$

$$\cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2\pi)^{p-q} \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22})}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})^\top \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right)$$

$$= n(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} \mid \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{(1)}) n(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \mid \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{(2)}).$$

Thus the marginal distribution of  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11})$  and the marginal distribution of  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22})$ . We have prove two variables are independent.

Necessity (independent  $\Longrightarrow$  uncorrelated): Let  $1 \le i \le q$  and  $q+1 \le j \le p$ . The Independence means

$$\sigma_{ij} = \mathbb{E}\left[ (x_i - \mu_i)(x_j - \mu_j) \right]$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} (x_i - \mu_i)(x_j - \mu_j) f(x_1, \dots, x_p) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_p$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} (x_i - \mu_i)(x_j - \mu_j) f(x_1, \dots, x_q) f(x_{q+1}, \dots, x_p) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_p$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} (x_i - \mu_i) f(x_1, \dots, x_q) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_q \cdot \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} (x_j - \mu_j) f(x_{q+1}, \dots, x_p) \, dx_{q+1} \dots \, dx_p$$

$$= 0.$$

**Theorem 2.3.** If  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  with  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \succ \mathbf{0}$ , the marginal distribution of any set of components of  $\mathbf{x}$  is multivariate normal with means, variances, and covariances obtained by taking the corresponding components of  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ , respectively.

*Proof.* We shall make a non-singular linear transformation  ${\bf B}$  to subvectors

$$\mathbf{y}^{(1)} = \mathbf{x}^{(1)} + \mathbf{B}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$$
$$\mathbf{y}^{(2)} = \mathbf{x}^{(2)}$$

leading to the components of  $\mathbf{y}^{(1)}$  are uncorrelated with the ones of  $\mathbf{y}^{(2)}$ . The matrix **B** should satisfy

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{0} &= & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{y}^{(1)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{y}^{(1)}\right]\right)\left(\mathbf{y}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{y}^{(2)}\right]\right)^{\top}\right] \\ &= & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} + \mathbf{B}\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(1)} + \mathbf{B}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)^{\top}\right] \\ &= & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(1)}\right] + \mathbf{B}\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)^{\top}\right] \\ &= & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(1)}\right]\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)^{\top}\right] + \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)\right)\left(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]\right)^{\top}\right] \\ &= & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{12} + \mathbf{B}\mathbf{\Sigma}_{22}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $\mathbf{B}=-\mathbf{\Sigma}_{12}\mathbf{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}$  and  $\mathbf{y}^{(1)}=\mathbf{x}^{(1)}-\mathbf{\Sigma}_{12}\mathbf{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}.$  The vector

$$\mathbf{y} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{y}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{y}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}$$

is a non-singular transform of  $\mathbf{x}$ , and therefore has a normal distribution with

$$\mathbb{E}\begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{y}^{(1)}\\\mathbf{y}^{(2)}\end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{I} & -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\\\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I}\end{bmatrix}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}] = \begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{I} & -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\\\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I}\end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)}\\\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\\\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix}\boldsymbol{\nu}^{(1)}\\\boldsymbol{\nu}^{(2)}\end{bmatrix}$$

Since the transform is non-singular, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \operatorname{Cov}\begin{bmatrix}\mathbf{y}^{(1)}\\\mathbf{y}^{(2)}\end{bmatrix} &= \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\\\mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\\\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0}\\ -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} - \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \mathbf{0}\\ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0}\\ -\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} - \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \mathbf{0}\\ \mathbf{0} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix} \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $\mathbf{y}^{(1)}$  and  $\mathbf{y}^{(2)}$  are independent, which implies the marginal distribution of  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22})$ . Because the numbering of the components of  $\mathbf{x}$  is arbitrary, we have proved this theorem.

**Singular Normal Distribution** The mass is concentrated on a linear set  $\mathcal{S}$ . For any  $x \notin \mathcal{S}$ , there exists  $\mathcal{B}(x,r)$  such that r > 0 and  $\mathcal{B} \cap \mathcal{S} = \emptyset$ . If the distribution of x has density function f, then f(x) = 0 holds for any  $x \notin \mathcal{S}$ . Since the measure of  $\mathcal{S}$  is zero, we have f(x) = 0 almost everywhere, which means the integration of f(x) on the whole space is 0.

Conditional Distribution by Schur Complement Recall that

$$\begin{bmatrix} A & B \\ C & D \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} I & BD^{-1} \\ 0 & I \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} A - BD^{-1}C & 0 \\ 0 & D \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} I & 0 \\ D^{-1}C & I \end{bmatrix},$$

which directly means the inverse of covariance of Normal distribution.

**Theorem 2.4.** Let  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Then

$$z = Dx$$

is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_{a}(\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\mu},\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{D}^{\top})$  for any  $\mathbf{D} \in \mathbb{R}^{q \times p}$ .

*Proof.* It is easy to verify  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{z}] = \mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\text{Cov}[\mathbf{z}] = \mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{D}^{\top}$ . Hence, we only need to show  $\mathbf{z}$  follows normal distribution.

Since  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , it can be presented as

$$x = Av + \lambda$$

where  $\mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times r}$ , r is the rank of  $\Sigma$  and  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}_r(\nu, \mathbf{T})$  with non-singular  $\mathbf{T} \succ \mathbf{0}$ . We can write

$$\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\lambda},$$

where  $\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{q \times r}$ . If the rank of  $\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}$  is r, the formal definition of a normal distribution that includes the singular distribution implies  $\mathbf{z}$  follows normal distribution.

If the rank of **DA** is less than r, say s, then

$$\mathbf{E} = \mathrm{Cov}[\mathbf{z}] = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathrm{Cov}[\mathbf{y}]\mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{D}^{\top} = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{A}^{\top}\mathbf{D}^{\top} \in \mathbb{R}^{q \times q}$$

is rank of s. There is a non-singular matrix

$$\mathbf{F} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{F}_1 \ \mathbf{F}_2 \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{q imes q}$$

with  $\mathbf{F}_1 \in \mathbb{R}^{s \times q}$  and  $\mathbf{F}_2 \in \mathbb{R}^{(q-s) \times r}$  such that

$$\mathbf{F}\mathbf{E}\mathbf{F}^\top = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{E}\mathbf{F}_1^\top & \mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{E}\mathbf{F}_2^\top \\ \mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{E}\mathbf{F}_1^\top & \mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{E}\mathbf{F}_2^\top \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} (\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})^\top & (\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})^\top \\ (\mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})^\top & (\mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})^\top \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I}_s & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix}.$$

Thus  $(\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})\mathbf{T}(\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A})^{\top} = \mathbf{I}_s$  means  $\mathbf{F}_1\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}$  is of rank s and the non-singularity of  $\mathbf{T}$  means  $\mathbf{F}_2\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{0}$ . Hence, we have

$$\mathbf{F}\mathbf{z}' = \mathbf{F}(\mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\lambda}) = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{F}_1 \\ \mathbf{F}_2 \end{bmatrix} \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{F}\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\lambda} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{F}_1 \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} \\ \mathbf{F}_2 \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} \end{bmatrix} + \mathbf{F}\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\lambda} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{F}_1 \mathbf{D}\mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} \\ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} + \mathbf{F}\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\lambda}.$$

Let  $\mathbf{u}_1 = \mathbf{F}_1 \mathbf{D} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{y} \in \mathbb{R}^s$ . Since  $\mathbf{F}_1 \mathbf{D} \mathbf{A} \in \mathbb{R}^{s \times r}$  is of rank  $s \leq r$ , we conclude  $\mathbf{u}_1$  has a non-singular normal distribution. Let  $\mathbf{F}^{-1} = [\mathbf{G}_1, \mathbf{G}_2]$ , where  $\mathbf{G}_1 \in \mathbb{R}^{q \times s}$  and  $\mathbf{G}_2 \in \mathbb{R}^{q \times (q-s)}$ . Then

$$\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{F}^{-1} \left( egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{u}_1 \ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} + \mathbf{F} \mathbf{D} oldsymbol{\lambda} 
ight) = \left[ \mathbf{G}_1, \mathbf{G}_2 
ight] egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{u}_1 \ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix} + \mathbf{D} oldsymbol{\lambda} = \mathbf{G}_1 \mathbf{u}_1 + \mathbf{D} oldsymbol{\lambda}$$

which is of the form of the formal definition of normal distribution.

**Theorem 2.5.** For  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and every vector  $\boldsymbol{\alpha} \in \mathbb{R}^{(p-q)}$ , we have

$$\operatorname{Var}\left[x_i^{(11.2)}\right] \leq \operatorname{Var}\left[x_i - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right],$$

for i = 1, ..., q, where  $x_i^{(11.2)}$  and  $x_i$  are the i-th entry of  $\mathbf{x}^{(11.2)}$  and the i-th entry of  $\mathbf{x}$  respectively. Proof. We denote

$$\mathbf{B} = egin{bmatrix} oldsymbol{eta}_{(1)}^{ op} \ dots \ oldsymbol{eta}_{(q)}^{ op} \end{bmatrix}.$$

Since  $\mathbf{x}^{(11.2)}$  is uncorrelated with  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  and

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}^{(11.2)}] = \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}^{(1)} - (\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} + \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}))] = \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}^{(1)}] - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} + \mathbf{B}(\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}^{(2)}] - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}) = \mathbf{0},$$

we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \operatorname{Var} \big[ x_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \big] \\ &= \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \big] \big]^{2} \\ &= \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i} - \mu_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big]^{2} \\ &= \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} + \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big]^{2} \\ &= \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} - \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big] + (\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha})^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big]^{2} \\ &= \operatorname{Var} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big] + \mathbb{E} \big[ \big( x_{i}^{(11.2)} - \mathbb{E} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big] \big) \big( \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha} \big)^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big] + \mathbb{E} \big[ \big( \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha} \big)^{\top} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big]^{2} \\ &= \operatorname{Var} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big] + (\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha})^{\top} \mathbb{E} \big[ \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big) \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \big)^{\top} \big] \big( \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha} \big) \\ &= \operatorname{Var} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big] + (\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha})^{\top} \operatorname{Cov} \big( \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \big) \big( \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\alpha} \big) \\ &\geq \operatorname{Var} \big[ x_{i}^{(11.2)} \big], \end{aligned}$$

where the quadratic form attains its minimum of 0 at  $\beta_{(i)} = \alpha$ .

#### Remark 2.1. Observe that

$$\mathbb{E}[x_i] = \mu_i + \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} (\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})$$

Hence, the second equality in the proof means  $\mu_i + \beta_{(i)}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})$  is the best linear predictor of  $x_i$  in the sense that of all functions of  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  of the form  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)} + c$ , the mean squared error of the above is a minimum.

**Theorem 2.6.** Under the setting of Theorem 2.5, we have

$$\operatorname{Corr}\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right) \geq \operatorname{Corr}\left(x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right).$$

*Proof.* Since the correlation between two variables is unchanged when either or both is multiplied by a positive constant, we can assume that

$$\mathbb{E}\left[oldsymbol{lpha}^{ op}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}
ight]^2 = \mathbb{E}\left[oldsymbol{eta}_{(i)}^{ op}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}
ight]^2.$$

Using Theorem 2.5, we have

$$\operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}^{(11.2)}\right] \leq \operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]$$

$$\iff \mathbb{E}\left[x_{i} - \mu_{i} - \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right]^{2} \leq \mathbb{E}\left[x_{i} - \mu_{i} - \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right]^{2}$$

$$\iff \operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\left(x_{i} - \mu_{i}\right)\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right] + \operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]$$

$$\leq \operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\left(x_{i} - \mu_{i}\right)\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right] + \operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]$$

$$\iff \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[\left(x_{i} - \mu_{i}\right)\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)})\right]}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right]}\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right)}} \leq \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[\left(x_{i} - \mu_{i}\right)\boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}\right)\right]}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right]}\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\beta}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right)}}$$

$$\iff \frac{\operatorname{Cov}\left[x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right]}\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\beta}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right)}} \leq \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[x_{i}, \boldsymbol{\beta}_{(i)}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right]}{\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[x_{i}\right]}\sqrt{\operatorname{Var}\left[\boldsymbol{\beta}^{\top}\mathbf{x}^{(2)}\right)}}$$

**Theorem 2.7.** Let  $\mathbf{x} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix}$ . If  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  and  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  are independent and  $g(\mathbf{x}) = g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})$ , its characteristic function is

$$\mathbb{E}[g(\mathbf{x})] = \mathbb{E}[g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})]\mathbb{E}[g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})].$$

*Proof.* Let  $f(\mathbf{x}) = f^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})f^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})$  be the density of  $\mathbf{x}$ . If g(x) is real-valued, we have

$$\mathbb{E}[g(\mathbf{x})] = \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} g(\mathbf{x}) f(\mathbf{x}) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_p 
= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)}) g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) f^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)}) f^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_p 
= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)}) f^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)}) \, dx_1 \dots \, dx_q \cdot \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) f^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) \, dx_{q+1} \dots \, dx_p 
= \mathbb{E}[g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})] \mathbb{E}[g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})].$$

If g(x) is complex-valued, then we have

$$\begin{split} &g(\mathbf{x}) \\ &= \left[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)}) + \mathrm{i}\,g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\right] \left[g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) + \mathrm{i}\,g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\right] \\ &= g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) - g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) + \mathrm{i}\left[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) + g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\right] \end{split}$$

and

$$\begin{split} & \mathbb{E}\big[g(\mathbf{x})\big] \\ = & \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] - \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] + \mathrm{i}\,\mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)}) + g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] \end{split}$$

$$\begin{split} &= & \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] - \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] \\ &+ \mathrm{i}\, \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] + \mathrm{i}\, \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] \\ &= & \Big[ \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] + \mathrm{i}\, \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \Big] \Big[ \mathbb{E}\big[g_1^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] + \mathrm{i}\, \mathbb{E}\big[g_2^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big] \Big] \\ &= & \mathbb{E}\big[g^{(1)}(\mathbf{x}^{(1)})\big] \mathbb{E}\big[g^{(2)}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)})\big]. \end{split}$$

**Theorem 2.8.** The characteristic function of  $\mathbf{x}$  distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mu, \mathbf{\Sigma})$  is

$$\phi(\mathbf{t}) = \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{t}\right).$$

for every  $\mathbf{t} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ .

*Proof.* For standard normal distribution  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I})$ , we have

$$\phi_{0}(\mathbf{t}) = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(i\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{y}\right)\right]$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{\exp(i\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{y})}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{y}\right) \, \mathrm{d}y_{1} \dots \, \mathrm{d}y_{p}$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{p} \left(\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{\exp(i\,t_{j}y_{j})}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_{j}^{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}y_{j}\right)$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{p} \left(\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(y_{j} - i\,t_{j})^{2} - \frac{1}{2}t_{j}^{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}y_{j}\right)$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{p} \left(\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t_{j}^{2}\right) \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{p/2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}z_{j}^{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}z_{j}\right)$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{p} \left(\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t_{j}^{2}\right)\right) = \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{t}\right).$$

For the general case of  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , we can write  $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{A}\mathbf{y} + \boldsymbol{\mu}$  such that  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I})$  and  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \mathbf{A}\mathbf{A}^{\top}$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} \phi(\mathbf{t}) &= \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp(\mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{x}) \right] \\ &= \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp(\mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} (\mathbf{A} \mathbf{y} + \boldsymbol{\mu})) \right] \\ &= \exp \left( \mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \, \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp(\mathrm{i} \, (\mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{t})^{\top} \mathbf{y}) \right] \\ &= \exp \left( \mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \, \phi_0 \left( \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{t} \right) \\ &= \exp \left( \mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \, \exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{A}^{\top} \mathbf{t} \right) \\ &= \exp \left( \mathrm{i} \, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma} \mathbf{t} \right). \end{aligned}$$

Remark 2.2. Denote the characteristic function of  $\mathbf{x} \in \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  as  $\phi_{\mathbf{x}}(\mathbf{t}) = \exp\left(i \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{t}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \mathbf{t}\right)$ . For  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}$ , the characteristic function of  $\mathbf{z}$  is

$$\phi_{\mathbf{z}}(\mathbf{t}) = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{z})\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x})\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\,(\mathbf{D}^{\top}\mathbf{t})^{\top}\mathbf{x})\right] = \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}(\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\mu}) - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}(\mathbf{D}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{D})\mathbf{t}\right)$$

which implies  $\mathbf{z} \sim \mathcal{N}(\mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\mu}, \mathbf{D}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{D})$  and we prove Theorem 2.4.

**Theorem 2.9.** If every linear combination of the components of a random vector  $\mathbf{y}$  is normally distributed, then  $\mathbf{y}$  is normally distributed.

*Proof.* Let  $\mathbf{y}$  is a random vector with  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] = \boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\operatorname{Cov}[\mathbf{y}] = \boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ . Suppose the univariate random variable  $\mathbf{u}^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{y}$  (linear combination of  $\mathbf{y}$ ) is normal distributed for any  $\mathbf{u} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ . The characteristic function of  $\mathbf{u}^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{y}$  is

$$\begin{split} \phi_{\mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{y}}(t) = & \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\,t\mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{y})\right] \\ = & \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,t\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{y}] - \frac{1}{2}t^{2}\mathrm{Cov}(\mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{y})\right) \\ = & \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,t\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2}t^{2}\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{u}\right). \end{split}$$

Set t = 1, then we have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{y})\right] = \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{u}\right).$$

which implies the characteristic function of y is

$$\phi_{\mathbf{y}}(\mathbf{u}) = \exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{u}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{u}\right)$$

that is,  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ .

Theorem 2.10. Let  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}_1, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_1)$ ,  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}_2, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_2)$  and  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{x} + \mathbf{y}$ . Suppose that  $\mathbf{x}$  and  $\mathbf{y}$  are independent. Prove  $\mathbf{z} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}_1 + \boldsymbol{\mu}_2, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_1 + \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_2)$ .

*Proof.* Let  $\phi_{\mathbf{x}}$ ,  $\phi_{\mathbf{y}}$  and  $\phi_{\mathbf{z}}$  be the characteristic functions of  $\mathbf{x}$ ,  $\mathbf{y}$  and  $\mathbf{z}$ . Then we have

$$\begin{split} & \boldsymbol{\phi}_{\mathbf{z}}(\mathbf{t}) \\ &= \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}(\mathbf{x}+\mathbf{y})\right)\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\right)\right] \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{y}\right)\right] \\ &= \exp\left(-\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu}_{1} + \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{1}\mathbf{t}\right) \exp\left(-\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu}_{2} + \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2}\mathbf{t}\right) \\ &= \exp\left(-\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^{\top}(\boldsymbol{\mu}_{1} + \boldsymbol{\mu}_{2}) + \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{1} + \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2})\mathbf{t}\right), \end{split}$$

which is the characteristic function of  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mu_1 + \mu_2, \Sigma_1 + \Sigma_2)$ .

### 3 Estimation of the Mean Vector and the Covariance

**Theorem 3.1.** If  $\mathbf{x}_1, \mathbf{x}_2, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  constitute a sample from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  with p < N, the maximum likelihood estimators of  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$  are

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}} = \bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \quad and \quad \hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}$$

respectively.

*Proof.* The logarithm of the likelihood function is

$$\ln L = -\frac{PN}{2} \ln 2\pi - \frac{N}{2} \ln \left( \det(\mathbf{\Sigma}) \right) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}).$$

We have

$$\begin{split} &\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \\ &= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \\ &+ \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \\ &= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \\ &\geq \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}), \end{split}$$

where the equality holds when  $\mu = \bar{\mathbf{x}}$ . Hence, the estimator of means should be  $\hat{\mu} = \bar{\mathbf{x}}$ . Now, we only need to study how to maximize

$$-\frac{pN}{2}\ln 2\pi - \frac{N}{2}\ln\left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right) - \frac{1}{2}\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N}(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}).$$

We let  $\Psi = \Sigma^{-1}$  and

$$\begin{split} l(\boldsymbol{\Psi}) &= -\frac{PN}{2} \ln 2\pi - \frac{N}{2} \ln \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Psi}^{-1}) \right) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Psi} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \\ &= -\frac{PN}{2} \ln 2\pi + \frac{N}{2} \ln \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Psi}) \right) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \operatorname{tr} \left( (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Psi} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) \\ &= -\frac{PN}{2} \ln 2\pi + \frac{N}{2} \ln \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Psi}) \right) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \operatorname{tr} \left( (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \right), \end{split}$$

then

$$\frac{\partial l(\boldsymbol{\Psi})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\Psi}} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \boldsymbol{\Psi}} \left( -\frac{PN}{2} \ln 2\pi + \frac{N}{2} \ln \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Psi}) \right) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \operatorname{tr} \left( (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Psi} \right) \right)$$

$$= \frac{N}{2} \boldsymbol{\Psi}^{-1} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

We can verify  $l(\Psi)$  is concave on the domain of symmetric positive definite matrices, which means the maximum is taken by  $\frac{\partial f(\Psi)}{\partial \Psi} = \mathbf{0}$ , that is,

$$\mathbf{\Sigma} = \mathbf{\Psi}^{-1} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

**Lemma 3.1.** If  $\mathbf{D} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  is positive definite, the maximum of

$$f(\mathbf{G}) = -N \ln \det(\mathbf{G}) - \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{D})$$

with respect to positive definite matrices **G** exists, occurs at  $\mathbf{G} = \frac{1}{N}\mathbf{D}$ .

*Proof.* Let  $\mathbf{D} = \mathbf{E}\mathbf{E}^{\top}$  and  $\mathbf{E}^{\top}\mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{H}$ . Then we have  $\mathbf{G} = \mathbf{E}\mathbf{H}^{-1}\mathbf{E}^{\top}$ ,

$$\det(\mathbf{G}) = \det(\mathbf{E}) \det(\mathbf{H}^{-1}) \det(\mathbf{E}^{\top}) = \det(\mathbf{E}\mathbf{E}^{\top}) \det(\mathbf{H}^{-1}) = \frac{\det(\mathbf{D})}{\det(\mathbf{H})}$$

and

$$\operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{D}) = \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{E}\mathbf{E}^{\top}) = \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{E}^{\top}\mathbf{G}^{-1}\mathbf{E}) = \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{H}).$$

Then the function to be maximized (with respect to positive definite  $\mathbf{H}$ ) is

$$g(\mathbf{H}) = -N \ln \det(\mathbf{D}) + N \ln \det(\mathbf{H}) - \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{H}).$$

Let  $\mathbf{H} = \mathbf{T}\mathbf{T}^{\top}$  here  $\mathbf{L}$  is lower triangular. Then the maximum of

$$g(\mathbf{H}) = -N \ln \det(\mathbf{D}) + N \ln \det(\mathbf{H}) - \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{H})$$

$$= -N \ln \det(\mathbf{D}) + N \ln(\det(\mathbf{T}))^{2} - \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{T}\mathbf{T}^{\top})$$

$$= -N \ln \det(\mathbf{D}) + N \ln \left(\prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{2}\right) - \sum_{i \geq j} t_{ij}^{2}$$

$$= -N \ln \det(\mathbf{D}) + \sum_{i=1}^{p} \left(N \ln(t_{ii}^{2}) - t_{ii}^{2}\right) - \sum_{i \geq j} t_{ij}^{2}$$

occurs at  $t_{ii}^2 = N$  and  $t_{ij} = 0$  for  $i \neq j$ ; that is  $\mathbf{H} = N\mathbf{I}$ . Then

$$\mathbf{G} = \frac{1}{N}\mathbf{D}.$$

**Theorem 3.2.** Let  $f(\theta)$  be a real-valued function defined on a set S and let  $\phi$  be a single-valued function, with a single-valued inverse, on S to a set  $S^*$ . Let

$$g(\theta^*) = f\left(\phi^{-1}(\theta^*)\right).$$

Then if  $f(\theta)$  attains a maximum at  $\theta = \theta_0$ , then  $g(\theta^*)$  attains a maximum at  $\theta^* = \theta_0^* = \phi(\theta_0)$ . If the maximum of  $f(\theta)$  at  $\theta_0$  is unique, so is the maximum of  $g(\theta^*)$  at  $\theta_0^*$ .

*Proof.* By hypothesis  $f(\theta_0) \geq f(\theta)$  for all  $\theta \in \mathcal{S}$ . Then for any  $\theta^* \in \mathcal{S}^*$ , we have

$$g(\theta^*) = f\left(\phi^{-1}(\theta^*)\right) = f(\theta) \le f(\theta_0) = g(\phi(\theta_0)) = g(\theta_0^*).$$

Thus  $g(\theta^*)$  attains a maximum at  $\theta_0^* = \phi(\theta_0)$ . If the maximum of  $f(\theta)$  at  $\theta_0$  is unique, there is strict inequality above for  $\theta \neq \theta_0$ , and the maximum of  $g(\theta^*)$  is unique.

**Theorem 3.3.** If  $\phi: \mathcal{S} \to \mathcal{S}^*$  is not one-to-one, we let

$$\phi^{-1}(\boldsymbol{\theta}^*) = \{ \boldsymbol{\theta} : \boldsymbol{\theta}^* = \boldsymbol{\phi}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \}.$$

and the induced likelihood function

$$g(\boldsymbol{\theta}^*) = \sup\{f(\boldsymbol{\theta}) : \boldsymbol{\theta}^* = \boldsymbol{\phi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})\}.$$

If  $\theta = \hat{\theta}$  maximize  $f(\theta)$ , then  $\hat{\theta}^* = \phi(\hat{\theta})$  also maximize  $g(\theta^*)$ .

*Proof.* The definition means

$$\sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^* \in \mathcal{S}^*} g(\boldsymbol{\theta}^*) = \sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^* \in \mathcal{S}^*} \sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^* = \boldsymbol{\phi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})} f(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathcal{S}} f(\boldsymbol{\theta}).$$

The definition of  $\hat{\theta}^* = \phi(\hat{\theta})$  means

$$f(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = \sup_{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \boldsymbol{\phi}(\boldsymbol{\theta})} f(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = g(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*)$$

Since  $\theta = \hat{\theta}$  maximize  $f(\theta)$ , we have

$$g(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) = f(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = \sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta} \in \mathcal{S}} f(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^* \in \mathcal{S}^*} g(\boldsymbol{\theta}^*),$$

which implies  $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*$  maximize  $g(\boldsymbol{\theta}^*)$ .

Corollary 3.1. If  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  constitutes a sample from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , let  $\rho_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}/(\sigma_i \sigma_j)$ . Then the maximum likelihood estimator of  $\rho_{ij}$  is

$$\hat{\rho}_{ij} = \frac{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{i\alpha} - \bar{x}_i)(x_{j\alpha} - \bar{x}_j)}{\sqrt{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{i\alpha} - \bar{x}_i)^2} \sqrt{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{j\alpha} - \bar{x}_j)^2}}$$

*Proof.* The set of parameters  $\mu_i = \mu_i$ ,  $\sigma_i^2 = \sigma_{ii}$  and  $\rho_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}/\sqrt{\sigma_{ii}\sigma_{jj}}$  is a one-to-one transform of the set of parameters  $\mu$  and  $\Sigma$ . Then the estimator of  $\rho$  is

$$\hat{\rho}_{ij} = \frac{\hat{\sigma}_{ij}}{\sqrt{\hat{\sigma}_{ii}\hat{\sigma}_{jj}}} = \frac{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{i\alpha} - \bar{x}_i)(x_{j\alpha} - \bar{x}_j)}{\sqrt{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{i\alpha} - \bar{x}_i)^2} \sqrt{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (x_{j\alpha} - \bar{x}_j)^2}}.$$

**Theorem 3.4.** Suppose  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independent, where  $\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}_{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Let  $\mathbf{C} \in \mathbb{R}^{N \times N}$  be an orthogonal matrix, then

$$\mathbf{y}_{lpha} = \sum_{eta=1}^{N} c_{lphaeta} \mathbf{x}_{eta} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(oldsymbol{
u}_{lpha}, oldsymbol{\Sigma}),$$

where  $\nu_{\alpha} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} \mu_{\beta}$  for  $\alpha = 1, ..., N$  and  $\mathbf{y}_{1}, ..., \mathbf{y}_{N}$  are independent.

*Proof.* The set of vectors  $\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N$  have a joint normal distribution, because the entire set of components is a set of linear combinations of the components of  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$ , which have a joint normal distribution. The expected value of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}$  is

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}] = \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} \boldsymbol{\mu}_{\beta}.$$

The covariance matrix between  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}$  and  $\mathbf{y}_{\gamma}$  is

$$\begin{aligned} &\operatorname{Cov}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{y}_{\gamma}] \\ =& \mathbb{E}[(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\nu}_{\alpha})(\mathbf{y}_{\gamma} - \boldsymbol{\nu}_{\gamma})^{\top}] \\ =& \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{x}_{\beta} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{\beta})\right) \left(\sum_{\xi=1}^{N} c_{\gamma\xi}(\mathbf{x}_{\xi} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{\xi})^{\top}\right)\right] \\ =& \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \sum_{\xi=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\xi} \mathbb{E}\left[(\mathbf{x}_{\beta} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{\beta})(\mathbf{x}_{\xi} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{\xi})^{\top}\right] \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{split} &= \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \sum_{\xi=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\xi} \delta_{\beta\xi} \mathbf{\Sigma} \\ &= \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\beta} \mathbf{\Sigma}, \end{split}$$

where

$$\delta_{\beta\xi} = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } \beta = \xi, \\ 0, & \text{if } \beta \neq \xi. \end{cases}$$

If  $\alpha = \gamma$ , we have  $\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\beta} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\alpha\beta} = 1$ ; otherwise, we have  $\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\beta} = 0$ . Hence, we have

$$Cov[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{y}_{\gamma}] = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} c_{\gamma\beta} \mathbf{\Sigma} = \delta_{\alpha\gamma} \mathbf{\Sigma}.$$

The set of vectors  $\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N$  have a joint normal distribution, we have proved  $\text{Cov}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}] = \mathbf{\Sigma}$  for  $\alpha = 1, \dots, N$  and  $\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N$  are independent.

### Lemma 3.2. If

$$\mathbf{C} = \begin{bmatrix} c_{11} & c_{12} & \dots & c_{1N} \\ c_{21} & c_{22} & \dots & c_{2N} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ c_{N1} & c_{N2} & \dots & c_{NN} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} c_1^\top \\ c_2^\top \\ \vdots \\ c_N^\top \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{N \times N}$$

is orthogonal, then  $\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{\top}$  where  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} c_{\alpha\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}$  for  $\alpha = 1, \dots, N$ .

Proof. Let

$$\mathbf{X} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_1^{ op} \ \mathbf{x}_2^{ op} \ dots \ \mathbf{x}_N^{ op} \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{N imes p}.$$

We have

$$\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{\top} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \mathbf{X}^{\top} \mathbf{c}_{\alpha} \mathbf{c}_{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{X} = \mathbf{X}^{\top} \left( \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \mathbf{c}_{\alpha} \mathbf{c}_{\alpha}^{\top} \right) \mathbf{X} = \mathbf{X}^{\top} \left( \mathbf{C}^{\top} \mathbf{C} \right) \mathbf{X} = \mathbf{X}^{\top} \mathbf{X} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top}.$$

Remark 3.1. We can also write  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} = \mathbf{X}^{\top} \mathbf{c}_{\alpha}$  and  $\mathbf{Y} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{X}$  by defining  $\mathbf{Y}$  like  $\mathbf{X}$ .

**Theorem 3.5.** Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{x}_N$  be independent, each distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Then the mean of the sample

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}} = \bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}$$

is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and independent of

$$\hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

Additionally, we have  $N\hat{\Sigma} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$ , where  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \sim \mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \Sigma)$  for  $\alpha = 1, ..., N$ , and  $\mathbf{z}_{1}, ..., \mathbf{z}_{N-1}$  are independent.

*Proof.* There exists an orthogonal matrix  $\mathbf{B} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  such that

$$\mathbf{B} = \begin{bmatrix} \times & \times & \dots & \times \\ \times & \times & \dots & \times \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} & \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} & \dots & \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \end{bmatrix}$$

Let  $\mathbf{A} = N\hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}}$  and let  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{\alpha\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}$ , then

$$\mathbf{z}_N = \sum_{\beta=1}^N b_{N\beta} \mathbf{x}_\beta = \sum_{\beta=1}^N \frac{\mathbf{x}_\beta}{\sqrt{N}} = \sqrt{N} \bar{\mathbf{x}}$$

By Lemma 3.2, we have

$$\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} - \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \bar{\mathbf{x}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} + N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \mathbf{z}_{N} \mathbf{z}_{N}^{\top}$$

$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$$

Lemma 3.2 also states  $\mathbf{z}_N$  is independent of  $\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{N-1}$ , then the mean vector  $\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \mathbf{z}_N$  is independent of  $\mathbf{A}$  and  $\hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}} = \frac{1}{N} \mathbf{A}$ . Since  $\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \mathbf{z}_n = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{N\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}$ , Theorem 3.4 implies

$$\mathbb{E}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{N\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\sqrt{N}} \boldsymbol{\mu} = \boldsymbol{\mu}, \quad \text{and} \quad \operatorname{Cov}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}] = \frac{1}{N} \operatorname{Cov}\left[\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{N\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \frac{1}{N} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}.$$

Hence, we have  $\bar{\mathbf{x}} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)$ . For  $\alpha = 1, \dots, N-1$ , we also have

$$\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}] = \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{\alpha\beta} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{\alpha\beta} \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}_{\beta}\right] = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{\alpha\beta} \boldsymbol{\mu} = \sum_{\beta=1}^{N} b_{\alpha\beta} b_{N\beta} \sqrt{N} \boldsymbol{\mu} = \mathbf{0}.$$

and Theorem 3.4 implies  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \sim \mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ .

**Theorem 3.6.** Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  be p-dimensional random vector and they are independent. Denote

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \quad and \quad \hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

If  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}_1] = \cdots = \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{x}_N] = \boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $Cov[\mathbf{x}_1] = \cdots = Cov[\mathbf{x}_N] = \boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ , then we have

$$\mathbb{E}\big[\hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}}\big] = \frac{N-1}{N}\mathbf{\Sigma}.$$

*Proof.* We have

$$\boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \operatorname{Cov}[\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}] = \mathbb{E}\left[(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} + \boldsymbol{\mu}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top}\right] = \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top}\right] - \boldsymbol{\mu}\boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top}$$

and

$$\frac{1}{n}\Sigma = \operatorname{Cov}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}] = \mathbb{E}[(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \mathbb{E}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}])(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \mathbb{E}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}])^{\top}] = \mathbb{E}[\bar{\mathbf{x}}\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}] - \mu\mu^{\top}.$$

Hence, we obtain

$$\mathbb{E}[\hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}] = \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \bar{\mathbf{x}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} + \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top})\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{\top}\right] - \mathbb{E}\left[\bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}\right]$$

$$= \mathbf{\Sigma} + \mu \mu^{\top} - \left(\frac{1}{n} \mathbf{\Sigma} + \mu \mu^{\top}\right)$$

$$= \frac{n-1}{n} \mathbf{\Sigma}.$$

**Theorem 3.7.** Using the notation of Theorem 3.1, if N > p, the probability is 1 of drawing a sample so that

$$\hat{\Sigma} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}$$

is positive definite.

*Proof.* The proof of Theorem 3.1 shows that  $\mathbf{A} = \widetilde{\mathbf{Z}}^{\top} \widetilde{\mathbf{Z}}$  where

$$\widetilde{\mathbf{Z}} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{z}_1^{ op} \ dots \ \mathbf{z}_{N-1}^{ op} \end{bmatrix} \in \mathbb{R}^{(N-1) imes p},$$

which means  $\operatorname{rank}(\hat{\Sigma}) = \operatorname{rank}(\mathbf{A}) = \operatorname{rank}(\mathbf{Z})$ . Then the probability is 1 of  $\hat{\Sigma} \succ \mathbf{0}$  is equivalent to

$$\Pr\left(\operatorname{rank}(\widetilde{\mathbf{Z}}) = p\right) = 1.$$

Since appending rows at the end of  $\widetilde{\mathbf{Z}}$  will not increase its rank, we only needs to consider the case of N = p + 1  $(N - 1 = p \text{ and } \widetilde{\mathbf{Z}} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p})$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} & \Pr(\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p \text{ are linearly dependent}) \\ & \leq \sum_{i=1}^p \Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_i \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{i-1}, \mathbf{z}_i, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p\}\right) \\ & = p \Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_1 \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p\}\right) \\ & = p \mathbb{E}\left[\Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_1 \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_2, \mathbf{z}_3, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p\} \mid \mathbf{z}_2 = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_p\right)\right] \\ & = p \mathbb{E}[0] = 0 \end{aligned}$$

The second equality is obtained as follows

$$\Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_{1} \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p}\}\right)$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_{1} \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p}\}, \mathbf{z}_{2} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}\right) d\boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2} \dots d\boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_{1} \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p}\} \mid \mathbf{z}_{2} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}\right) \Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_{2} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}\right) d\boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2} \dots d\boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\Pr\left(\mathbf{z}_{1} \in \operatorname{span}\{\mathbf{z}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p}\} \mid \mathbf{z}_{2} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{2}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{p} = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_{p}\right)\right]$$

$$= 0$$

The last equality holds since  $\Pr(\mathbf{z}_1 \in \text{span}\{\mathbf{z}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p\} \mid \mathbf{z}_2 = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_2, \dots, \mathbf{z}_p = \boldsymbol{\alpha}_p)$  is the probability of the event that  $\mathbf{z}_1$  lies in a subspace with the dimension no higher than p-1.

**Theorem 3.8.** If  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independent observations from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , then

- 1.  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$  and  $\mathbf{S}$  are sufficient for  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ ;
- 2. if  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  is given,  $\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \boldsymbol{\mu}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top}$  is sufficient for  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ ;
- 3. if  $\Sigma$  is given,  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$  is sufficient for  $\mu$ ;

where

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \quad and \quad \mathbf{S} = \frac{1}{N-1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

*Proof.* The density of  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  is

$$\prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} n(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \mid \boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}) 
= (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr} \left( \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \right) \right) 
= (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr} \left( \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \right) \right) 
= (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} \left( N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) + (N - 1) \operatorname{tr} \left( \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{S} \right) \right) \right)$$

where the last step is due to

$$\sum_{lpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{lpha} - oldsymbol{\mu})^{ op} oldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{lpha} - oldsymbol{\mu})$$

$$\begin{split} &= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \\ &+ \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) + \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \\ &= N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) + (N - 1) \mathrm{tr} \left( \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{S} \right). \end{split}$$

Hence, the density is a function of  $\mathbf{t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N) = \{\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{S}\}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\theta} = \{\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}\}$ . If  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  is given, it is a function of  $\mathbf{t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N) = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\theta} = \boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ . If  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$  is given, it is a function of  $\mathbf{t}(\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N) = \bar{\mathbf{x}}$  (since  $\mathbf{S}$  can be viewed a function of  $\mathbf{t}$  for given)and  $\boldsymbol{\theta} = \boldsymbol{\mu}$ .

**Theorem 3.9** (Theorem 3.4.2, Page 84). The sufficient set of statistics  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$ ,  $\mathbf{S}$  is complete for  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$ ,  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$  when the sample is drawn from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ .

*Proof.* We introduce  $\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_N$  by following the proof of Theorem 3.5. For any function  $g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})$ , we have  $0 \equiv \mathbb{E}[g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})]$ 

$$= \int \cdots \int K(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma}))^{-\frac{N}{2}} g\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\right) \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \left(\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} + N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu})\right)\right) d\mathbf{z}_{1} \dots d\mathbf{z}_{N-1} d\bar{\mathbf{x}}.$$

for any  $\mu$  and  $\Sigma$ , where  $K = \sqrt{N}(2\pi)^{-\frac{1}{2}pN}$ . Let  $\Sigma^{-1} = \mathbf{I} - 2\Omega$  such that symmetric  $\Omega$  and  $\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega \succ 0$ . Let  $\mu = (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega)^{-1}\mathbf{t} = \Sigma \mathbf{t}$ . Then, we have

$$\begin{split} &0\\ &\equiv \int \cdots \int K \big( \det(\mathbf{\Sigma}) \big)^{-\frac{N}{2}} g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \right) \\ &\exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} \left( \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} + N \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} - 2N \boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + N \boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \right) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{1} \dots \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{N-1} \, \mathrm{d}\bar{\mathbf{x}} \\ &= \int \cdots \int K \big( \det(\mathbf{\Sigma}) \big)^{-\frac{N}{2}} g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \right) \\ &\exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} \left( \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathrm{tr} \left( \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \right) + N \mathrm{tr} \left( \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) - 2N \bar{\mathbf{t}}^{\top} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + N \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma} \mathbf{t} \right) \right) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{1} \dots \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{N-1} \, \mathrm{d}\bar{\mathbf{x}} \\ &= \int \cdots \int K \big( \det(\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega) \big)^{\frac{N}{2}} g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} \right) \\ &\exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} \left( \mathrm{tr} \left( (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega) \left( \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} + N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \right) - 2N \bar{\mathbf{t}}^{\top} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + N \mathbf{t}^{\top} (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega)^{-1} \mathbf{t} \right) \right) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{1} \dots \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{N-1} \, \mathrm{d}\bar{\mathbf{x}} \\ &= \left( \det(\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}} \exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} N \mathbf{t}^{\top} (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega)^{-1} \mathbf{t} \right) \\ &\int \cdots \int g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \exp \left( \mathrm{tr} (\Omega \mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top} (N \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) n \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}} \mid \mathbf{0}, \frac{1}{N} \mathbf{I} \right) \prod_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} n (\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mid \mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I}) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{1} \dots \mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}_{N-1} \, \mathrm{d}\bar{\mathbf{x}} \\ &= \left( \det(\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}} \exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} N \mathbf{t}^{\top} (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega)^{-1} \mathbf{t} \right) \\ &\int g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \exp \left( \mathrm{tr} (\Omega \mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top} (N \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) n \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}} \mid \mathbf{0}, \frac{1}{N} \mathbf{I} \right) \, \mathrm{d}\bar{\mathbf{x}} \\ &= \left( \det(\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}} \exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} N \mathbf{t}^{\top} (\mathbf{I} - 2\Omega)^{-1} \mathbf{t} \right) \\ &\mathbb{E} \left[ g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \exp \left( \mathrm{tr} (\Omega \mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top} (N \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) \right]. \end{split}$$

where 
$$\mathbf{B} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} + N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}$$
. Thus
$$0 \equiv \mathbb{E} \left[ g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \exp \left( \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Omega} \mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top}(N \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) \right]$$

$$= \iint g \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N \bar{\mathbf{x}} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top} \right) \exp \left( \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Omega} \mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top}(N \bar{\mathbf{x}}) \right) h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B}) d\bar{\mathbf{x}} d\mathbf{B}$$

where  $h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B})$  is the joint density of  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$  and  $\mathbf{B}$ . Consider that

$$\iint g\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N\bar{\mathbf{x}}\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}\right) \exp\left(\operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Omega}\mathbf{B}) + \mathbf{t}^{\top}(N\bar{\mathbf{x}})\right) h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B}) d\bar{\mathbf{x}} d\mathbf{B}$$

is the Laplace transform of  $g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B} - N\bar{\mathbf{x}}\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{\top}) h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B})$ . Then we have  $g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B}) = 0$  almost everywhere. Hence, we have

$$0 = \iint |g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B})| \, d\bar{\mathbf{x}} \, d\mathbf{B}$$
$$= \iint |g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})|h(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B})| \, d\bar{\mathbf{x}} \, d\mathbf{B}$$
$$= \iint |g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S})| \, dm(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, \mathbf{B}).$$

Hence, we have  $g(\bar{\mathbf{x}}, n\mathbf{S}) = 0$  almost everywhere.

**Cramer-Rao Inequality** We first give some lemmas. We denote the density of observation with parameter  $\theta$  by  $f(\mathbf{x}, \theta)$  and

$$\mathbf{s} = \frac{\partial \ln g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}}.$$

where g is the density on N samples and  $\mathbf{X} = {\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N}.$ 

**Lemma 3.3.** We have  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{s}] = \mathbf{0}$ .

*Proof.* We have

$$\mathbb{E}[s_j] = \int g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \frac{\partial \ln g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_j} d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \int g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \frac{1}{g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})} \frac{\partial g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_j} d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \int \frac{\partial g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_j} d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_j} \int g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_j} 1 = 0.$$

Remark 3.2. Similarly, we also have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\frac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}}\right] = \mathbf{0}.$$

**Lemma 3.4.** For unbiased estimator  $\mathbf{t}$  of  $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ , we have  $\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}, \mathbf{s}] = \mathbf{I}$ .

*Proof.* We have

$$\begin{split} &\mathscr{C}[t_j, s_k] \\ &= \int (t_j - \theta_j) \frac{\partial \ln g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_k} g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{X} \\ &= \int (t_j - \theta_j) \frac{\partial g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_k} \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{X} \\ &= -\int g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \frac{\partial (t_j - \theta_j)}{\partial \theta_k} \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{X} = \begin{cases} 1, & j = k, \\ 0, & j \neq k, \end{cases} \end{split}$$

where the last line holds since

$$\int (t_j - \theta_j) g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \, d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \int t_j g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \, d\mathbf{X} - \theta_j \int g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \, d\mathbf{X}$$

$$= \mathbb{E}t_j - \theta_j$$

$$= 0$$

and therefore

$$0 = \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_k} \int (t_j - \theta_j) g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{X}$$
$$= \int \frac{\partial (t_j - \theta_j)}{\partial \theta_k} g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{X} + \int (t_j - \theta_j) \frac{\partial g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta_k}.$$

**Theorem 3.10.** Under the regularity condition (everything is well-defined, integration and differentiation can be swapped), we have

$$N\mathbb{E}\left[ (\mathbf{t} - oldsymbol{ heta})(\mathbf{t} - oldsymbol{ heta})^{ op} 
ight] \succeq \left( \mathbb{E}\left[ rac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, oldsymbol{ heta})}{\partial oldsymbol{ heta}} \left( rac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, oldsymbol{ heta})}{\partial oldsymbol{ heta}} 
ight)^{ op} 
ight] 
ight)^{-1},$$

where  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{t}] = \boldsymbol{\theta}$  and  $f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})$  is the density of the distribution with respect to the components of  $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ .

*Proof.* For any nonzero  $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ , consider the correlation of  $\mathbf{a}^\top \mathbf{t}$  and  $\mathbf{b}^\top \mathbf{s}$ , we have

$$1 \ge \frac{\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathbf{t}, \mathbf{b}^{\top}\mathbf{s}]}{\sqrt{\mathrm{Var}[\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathbf{t}]\mathrm{Var}[\mathbf{b}^{\top}\mathbf{s}]}} = \frac{\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}, \mathbf{s}]\mathbf{b}}{\sqrt{\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}]\mathbf{a}}\sqrt{\mathbf{b}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}]\mathbf{b}}} = \frac{\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathbf{b}}{\sqrt{\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}]\mathbf{a}}\sqrt{\mathbf{b}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}]\mathbf{b}}}$$

Let  $\mathbf{b} = (\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}])^{-1}\mathbf{a}$ , we have

$$1 \geq \frac{\mathbf{a}^\top (\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}])^{-1} \mathbf{a}}{\sqrt{\mathbf{a}^\top \mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}] \mathbf{a}} \sqrt{\mathbf{a}^\top (\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}])^{-1} \mathbf{a}}}$$

which means

$$\mathbf{a}^{\top}\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}]\mathbf{a} \geq \mathbf{a}^{\top} \left(\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}]\right)^{-1} \mathbf{a}$$

for any nonzero a. Hence, we have

$$\begin{split} & \mathbb{E}\left[ (\mathbf{t} - \boldsymbol{\theta})(\mathbf{t} - \boldsymbol{\theta})^{\top} \right] = \mathscr{C}[\mathbf{t}] \succeq (\mathscr{C}[\mathbf{s}])^{-1} \\ & = \left( \mathscr{C}\left[ \frac{\partial \ln g(\mathbf{X}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right] \right)^{-1} = \left( N\mathscr{C}\left[ \frac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right] \right)^{-1} = \frac{1}{N} \left( \mathscr{C}\left[ \frac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right] \right)^{-1} \\ & = \frac{1}{N} \left( \mathbb{E}\left[ \frac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \left( \frac{\partial \ln f(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{\top} \right] \right)^{-1}. \end{split}$$

**Theorem 3.11.** Let p-component vectors  $\mathbf{y}_1, \mathbf{y}_2, \ldots$  be i.i.d with means  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}] = \boldsymbol{\nu}$  and covariance matrices  $\mathbb{E}[(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\nu})(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\nu})^{\top}] = \mathbf{T}$ . Then the limiting distribution of

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n}(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}-\boldsymbol{\nu})$$

as  $n \to +\infty$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{T})$ .

Proof. Let

$$\phi_n(\mathbf{t}, u) = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,u\mathbf{t}^\top \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{\alpha=1}^n (\mathbf{y}_\alpha - \boldsymbol{\nu})\right)\right],$$

where  $u \in \mathbb{R}$  and  $\mathbf{t} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ . For fixed  $\mathbf{t}$ , the function  $\phi_n(\mathbf{t}, u)$  can be viewed as the characteristic function of

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} (\mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}]).$$

By the univariate central limit theorem, the limiting distribution is  $\mathcal{N}(0, \mathbf{t}^{\top} \mathbf{T} \mathbf{t})$ . Therefore, we have

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} \phi_n(\mathbf{t}, u) = \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}u^2 \mathbf{t}^\top \mathbf{T} \mathbf{t}\right),$$

for any  $u \in \mathbb{R}$  and  $\mathbf{t} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ . Let u = 1, we obtain

$$\phi_n(\mathbf{t}, 1) = \mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{t}^\top \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{\alpha=1}^n (\mathbf{y}_\alpha - \boldsymbol{\nu})\right)\right] \to \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^\top \mathbf{T} \mathbf{t}\right)$$

for any  $\mathbf{t} \in \mathbb{R}^p$ . Since  $\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{t}^{\top}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{t}\right)$  is continuous at  $\mathbf{t} = \mathbf{0}$ , the convergence is uniform in some neighborhood of  $\mathbf{t} = \mathbf{0}$ . The theorem follows.

**Theorem 3.12.** If  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independently distributed, each  $x_\alpha$  according to  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , and if  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  has an a prior distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\nu}, \boldsymbol{\Phi})$ , then the a posterior distribution of  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  given  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  is normal with mean

$$\boldsymbol{\Phi} \left(\boldsymbol{\Phi} + \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \left(\boldsymbol{\Phi} + \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{\nu}$$

and covariance matrix

$$\mathbf{\Phi} - \mathbf{\Phi} \left( \mathbf{\Phi} + \frac{1}{N} \mathbf{\Sigma} \right)^{-1} \mathbf{\Phi}.$$

*Proof.* Since  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$  is sufficient for  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$ , we need only consider  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$ , which has the distribution of  $\boldsymbol{\mu} + \mathbf{y}$ , where

$$\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\mathbf{0}, rac{1}{N}\mathbf{\Sigma}
ight)$$

and is independent of  $\mu$ . Then we have

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu} \\ \mathbf{y} \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu} \\ \mathbf{y} \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\nu} \\ \mathbf{0} \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Phi} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \frac{1}{N} \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

which implies  $\bar{\mathbf{x}} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\boldsymbol{\nu}, \boldsymbol{\Phi} + \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)$ . Since we have

$$egin{bmatrix} m{\mu} \ ar{\mathbf{x}} \end{bmatrix} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \ \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} egin{bmatrix} m{\mu} \ \mathbf{y} \end{bmatrix},$$

then

$$\begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu} \\ \bar{\mathbf{x}} \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N}\left( \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\nu} \\ \boldsymbol{\nu} \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Phi} & \boldsymbol{\Phi} \\ \boldsymbol{\Phi} & \boldsymbol{\Phi} + \frac{1}{N}\boldsymbol{\Sigma} \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

Consider the conditional distribution of  $\mu$  given  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$ , we obtain the mean and covariance given  $\bar{\mathbf{x}}$  is

$$\nu + \Phi \left( \Phi + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \right)^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \nu)$$

$$= \Phi \left( \Phi + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \right)^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + \left( \mathbf{I} - \Phi \left( \Phi + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \right)^{-1} \right) \nu$$

$$= \Phi \left( \Phi + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \right)^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{x}} + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \left( \Phi + \frac{1}{N} \Sigma \right)^{-1} \nu.$$

Remark 3.3. Let

$$\mathbf{x} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} \\ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12} \\ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

The conditional density of  $\mathbf{x}^{(1)}$  given that  $\mathbf{x}^{(2)}$  is

$$\mathbf{x}^{(1)} \mid \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(oldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} + oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}(\mathbf{x}^{(2)} - oldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}), oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} - oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12}oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}^{-1}oldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22}
ight)$$

**Lemma 3.5.** If f(x) is a function such that

$$f(b) - f(a) = \int_a^b f'(x) \, \mathrm{d}x$$

for all a < b and if

$$\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} |f'(x)| \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right) dx < +\infty,$$

then

$$\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} f(x)(x-\theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right) dx = \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} f'(x) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right) dx. \tag{5}$$

*Proof.* Since  $(x-\theta)\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right)$  is odd function, the LHS of (5) can be written as

$$\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} (f(x) - f(\theta))(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dx$$

$$= \int_{\theta}^{+\infty} (f(x) - f(\theta))(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dx$$

$$+ \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} (f(x) - f(\theta))(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dx$$

$$= \int_{\theta}^{+\infty} \int_{\theta}^{x} f'(y)(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dy dx$$

$$- \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \int_{x}^{\theta} f'(y)(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dy dx$$

$$= \int_{\theta}^{+\infty} \int_{y}^{+\infty} f'(y)(x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dx dy$$

$$-\int_{-\infty}^{\theta} \int_{-\infty}^{y} f'(y)(x-\theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^{2}\right) dx dy$$

$$=\int_{\theta}^{+\infty} f'(y) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(y-\theta)^{2}\right) dy - \int_{-\infty}^{\theta} f'(y) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(y-\theta)^{2}\right) dy$$

$$=\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} f'(x) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^{2}\right) dx$$

where we use

$$\int (x - \theta) \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) dx$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right) d\left(\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right)$$

$$= \frac{-1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x - \theta)^2\right)$$

and

$$\lim_{x \to +\infty} \frac{-1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right) = \lim_{x \to -\infty} \frac{-1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\theta)^2\right) = 0.$$

**Lemma 3.6.** Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independently distributed to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, N\mathbf{I})$ , we have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right] = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{p} \operatorname{Var}(\bar{x}_{\alpha}) = p.$$

*Proof.* We have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\left\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)^{\top}\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)\right)\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\operatorname{tr}\left(\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)^{\top}\right)\right]$$

$$= \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbb{E}\left[\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)\left(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right)^{\top}\right]\right)$$

$$= \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{I}\right) = p.$$

Theorem 3.13. Under the setting of Lemma 3.6, we let

$$\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) = \left(1 - \frac{p - 2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^2}\right)(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}) + \boldsymbol{\nu}$$

 $and \; p > 3. \; \; Then \; \mathbb{E}\left[ \|\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2^2 \right] < \mathbb{E}\left[ \|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2^2 \right]$ 

*Proof.* We have

$$\Delta R(\boldsymbol{\mu}) = \mathbb{E}\left[\left\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2} - \left\|\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E}\left[\left\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2} - \left\|\left(1 - \frac{p - 2}{\left\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\right\|_{2}^{2}}\right)(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}) + \boldsymbol{\nu} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right]$$

$$\begin{split} &= \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{p} (\bar{x}_{i} - \mu_{i})^{2} - \sum_{i=1}^{p} \left(\left(1 - \frac{p-2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right) (\bar{x}_{i} - \nu_{i}) + \nu_{i} - \mu_{i}\right)^{2}\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{p} (\bar{x}_{i} - \mu_{i})^{2} - \sum_{i=1}^{p} \left(\bar{x}_{i} - \mu_{i} - \frac{p-2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} (\bar{x}_{i} - \nu_{i})\right)^{2}\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{2(p-2)}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{p} (\bar{x}_{i} - \nu_{i}) (\bar{x}_{i} - \mu_{i}) - \sum_{i=1}^{p} \frac{(p-2)^{2} (\bar{x}_{i} - \nu_{i})^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{4}}\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}\left[2(p-2) \sum_{i=1}^{p} \frac{\bar{x}_{i} - \nu_{i}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} \cdot (\bar{x}_{i} - \mu_{i}) - \frac{(p-2)^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right]. \end{split}$$

Using Lemma 3.5 with  $\theta = \mu_i$ ,

$$f(\bar{x}_i) = \frac{\bar{x}_i - \nu_i}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^2} \quad \text{and} \quad f'(\bar{x}_i) = \frac{1}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^2} - \frac{2(\bar{x}_i - \nu_i)^2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^4}.$$

Hence, we obtain

$$\begin{split} \Delta R(\pmb{\mu}) = & \mathbb{E}\left[2(p-2)\sum_{i=1}^{p}\left(\frac{1}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} - \frac{2(\bar{x}_{i}-\nu_{i})^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{4}}\right) - \frac{(p-2)^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right] \\ = & \mathbb{E}\left[2(p-2)\sum_{i=1}^{p}\left(\frac{1}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} - \frac{2(\bar{x}_{i}-\nu_{i})^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{4}}\right) - \frac{(p-2)^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right] \\ = & \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{2p(p-2)}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} - \frac{4(p-2)}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}} - \frac{(p-2)^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right] \\ = & \mathbb{E}\left[\frac{(p-2)^{2}}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}}-\pmb{\nu}\|_{2}^{2}}\right] > 0 \end{split}$$

Remark 3.4. We consider the bias and variance decomposition

$$\begin{split} & \mathbb{E} \left\| \mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_{2}^{2} \\ = & \mathbb{E} \left\| \mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] + \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_{2}^{2} \\ = & \mathbb{E} \left\| \mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] \right\|_{2}^{2} + 2\mathbb{E}[(\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})])^{\top} (\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] - \boldsymbol{\mu})] + \mathbb{E} \left\| \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_{2}^{2} \\ = & \mathbb{E} \left\| \mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] \right\|_{2}^{2} + \left\| \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}})] - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_{2}^{2}. \end{split}$$

Unbiased estimator may leads to larger variance.

**Lemma 3.7.** Suppose that  $\mathbf{x} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \mathbf{I})$ , then

$$\mathbb{E} \left\| g^+ \big( \|\mathbf{x}\|_2 \big) \mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_2^2 \le \mathbb{E} \left\| g \big( \|\mathbf{x}\|_2 \big) \mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right\|_2^2$$

where

$$g^{+}(u) = \begin{cases} g(u), & \text{if } g(u) \ge 0\\ 0, & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

for any function g(u).

Proof. We have

$$\mathbb{E} \|g(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2})\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}^{2} - \mathbb{E} \|g^{+}(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2})\mathbf{x} - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}^{2}$$

$$= \mathbb{E} \left[ \left( g(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) \right)^{2} \|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}^{2} \right] - \mathbb{E} \left[ \left( g^{+}(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) \right)^{2} \|\mathbf{x}\|^{2} \right] + 2\mathbb{E} \left[ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top} \mathbf{x} \left( g^{+}(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) \right) \right]$$

$$\geq 2\mathbb{E} \left[ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top} \mathbf{x} \left( g^{+}(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) \right) \right].$$

Let **P** be the orthogonal matrix such that  $\mathbf{PP}^{\top} = \mathbf{I}$  and

$$\mathbf{P} = \left[ \frac{\boldsymbol{\mu}}{\|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2}, \times, \ldots, \times \right],$$

which means

$$\mathbf{P}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\mu} = [\| \boldsymbol{\mu} \|_{2}, 0, \dots, 0]^{\top}.$$

Let  $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{P}^{\top}\mathbf{x}$ , then we have  $\boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top}\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top}\mathbf{P}\mathbf{y} = (\mathbf{P}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top}\mathbf{y} = \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2 y_1$  and

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\boldsymbol{\mu}^{\top}\mathbf{x}\left(g^{+}(\|\mathbf{x}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2})\right)\right] \\
= \mathbb{E}\left[\|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2} y_{1}\left(g^{+}(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2})\right)\right] \\
= \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_{1}\left(g^{+}(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2})\right) \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{\frac{p}{2}}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{p} y_{i}^{2} - 2y_{1} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2} + \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}^{2}\right)\right) d\mathbf{y} \\
= \frac{\|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}^{2}\right)}{(2\pi)^{\frac{p}{2}}} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} y_{1}\left(g^{+}(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2})\right) \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p} y_{i}^{2}\right) \exp(y_{1} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}) d\mathbf{y} \\
= \frac{\|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}^{2}\right)}{(2\pi)^{\frac{p}{2}}} \\
\cdot \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \dots \int_{0}^{+\infty} y_{1}\left(g^{+}(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2}) - g(\|\mathbf{y}\|_{2})\right) \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p} y_{i}^{2}\right) (\exp(y_{1} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2}) - \exp(-y_{1} \|\boldsymbol{\mu}\|_{2})) dy_{1} \dots dy_{p},$$

where the last step use  $\exp(z) - \exp(-z) \ge 0$  for all  $z \ge 0$ .

Theorem 3.14. Let

$$\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) = \left(1 - \frac{p-2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^2}\right)(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}) + \boldsymbol{\nu} \quad and \quad \tilde{\mathbf{m}}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) = \left(1 - \frac{p-2}{\|\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}\|_2^2}\right)^+(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}) + \boldsymbol{\nu},$$

where  $\bar{\mathbf{x}} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \mathbf{I})$ . Then we have  $\mathbb{E} \|\tilde{\mathbf{m}}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2^2 \leq \mathbb{E} \|\mathbf{m}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}) - \boldsymbol{\mu}\|_2^2$ .

*Proof.* Use Lemma 3.7 with g(u) = 1 - (p-2)/u,  $\mathbf{x} = \bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\nu}$  and replace  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  by  $\boldsymbol{\mu} - \boldsymbol{\nu}$ .

### 4 $T^2$ -Statistic

**Theorem 4.1.** For  $y \sim \chi^2(n)$ , we have  $\mathbb{E}[y] = n$  and Var[y] = 2n.

Proof. We can write

$$y = \sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^2,$$

where  $x_1, \ldots, x_n$  are independent standard normal variables. Then, we have

$$\mathbb{E}[y] = \mathbb{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^2\right] = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{E}\left[x_i^2\right] = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \operatorname{Var}\left[x_i\right] = n$$

and

$$Var[y] = Var\left[\sum_{i=1}^{n} x_i^2\right] = \sum_{i=1}^{n} Var\left[x_i^2\right] = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{E}\left[x_i^4 - \left(\mathbb{E}[x_i^2]\right)^2\right] = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbb{E}\left[3 - 1\right] = 2n.$$

We use the fact  $\mathbb{E}[x_i^4] = 3$  because of  $\phi(t) = \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t^2\right)$  and

$$\mathbb{E}[x_i^4] = \frac{1}{\mathrm{i}^4} \frac{\mathrm{d}^4 \phi(t)}{\mathrm{d}t^4} \bigg|_{t=0} = (t^4 - 6t^2 + 3) \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t^2\right) \bigg|_{t=0} = 3.$$

**Theorem 4.2.** The density of  $y \sim \chi^2(n)$  is

$$f(y; n) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} y^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right), & y > 0, \\ 0, & otherwise, \end{cases}$$

where

$$\Gamma(\alpha) = \int_0^\infty t^{\alpha - 1} \exp(-t) \, \mathrm{d}t.$$

*Proof.* We first provide the following results:

1. We have  $\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) = \sqrt{\pi}$ , because

$$\begin{split} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) &= \int_0^\infty t^{-1/2} \exp(-t) \, \mathrm{d}t \\ &= \int_0^\infty \left(\frac{1}{2} x^2\right)^{-1/2} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} x^2\right) \, \mathrm{d}\left(\frac{1}{2} x^2\right) \\ &= \int_0^\infty \frac{\sqrt{2}}{x} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} x^2\right) x \, \mathrm{d}x \\ &= \sqrt{2} \int_0^\infty \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} x^2\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ &= 2\sqrt{\pi} \int_0^\infty \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} x^2\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ &= \sqrt{\pi}. \end{split}$$

2. For  $y_1 = x^2$  with  $x \sim \mathcal{N}(0, 1)$ , the density function of  $y_1$  is

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi y_1}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_1\right).$$

We define the positive random variable  $\hat{x}$  whose density function is

$$\frac{2}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\hat{x}^2\right).$$

Then the transform  $\hat{x} = \sqrt{y_1}$  is one to one and the density of  $y_1$  is

$$\frac{2}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_1\right) \frac{\mathrm{d}\sqrt{y_1}}{\mathrm{d}y_1} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi y_1}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y_1\right).$$

#### 3. For beta function

$$B(\alpha, \beta) = \int_0^1 t^{\alpha - 1} (1 - t)^{\beta - 1} dt,$$

we have

$$B(\alpha, \beta) = \frac{\Gamma(\alpha)\Gamma(\beta)}{\Gamma(\alpha + \beta)}.$$

Consider that

$$\Gamma(\alpha)\Gamma(\beta)$$

$$= \int_0^\infty x^{\alpha - 1} \exp(-x) dx \int_0^\infty y^{\beta - 1} \exp(-y) dy$$

$$= \int_0^\infty \int_0^\infty x^{\alpha - 1} y^{\beta - 1} \exp(-(x + y)) dy dx.$$

Using the substitution x = uv and y = u(1 - v), then the Jacobian matrix of the transformation is

$$\mathbf{J} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{\partial x}{\partial u} & \frac{\partial x}{\partial v} \\ \frac{\partial y}{\partial u} & \frac{\partial y}{\partial v} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} v & u \\ 1 - v & -u \end{bmatrix}$$

and  $\det(\mathbf{J}) = -u$ . Since u = x + y and v = x/(x + y), we have that the limits of integration for u are 0 to  $\infty$  and the limits of integration for v are 0 to 1. Thus

$$\begin{split} \Gamma(\alpha)\Gamma(\beta) &= \int_0^\infty \int_0^\infty x^{\alpha-1} y^{\beta-1} \exp(-(x+y)) \, \mathrm{d}y \, \mathrm{d}x \\ &= \int_0^1 \int_0^\infty (uv)^{\alpha-1} (u(1-v))^{\beta-1} \exp(-(uv+u(1-v))) |-u| \, \mathrm{d}u \, \mathrm{d}v \\ &= \int_0^1 \int_0^\infty u^{\alpha+\beta-1} v^{\alpha-1} (1-v)^{\beta-1} \exp(-u) \, \mathrm{d}u \, \mathrm{d}v \\ &= \int_0^1 v^{\alpha-1} (1-v)^{\beta-1} \, \mathrm{d}v \int_0^\infty u^{\alpha+\beta-1} \exp(-u) \, \mathrm{d}u \\ &= B(\alpha,\beta) \Gamma(\alpha+\beta). \end{split}$$

#### 4. If

$$F(z) = \int_{a(z)}^{b(z)} f(y, z) \, \mathrm{d}y,$$

then

$$F'(z) = \int_{a(z)}^{b(z)} \frac{\partial f(y, z)}{\partial z} dx + f(b(z), z)b'(z) - f(a(z), z)a'(z).$$

We prove the density of Chi-square distribution by induction. For n=1 and y>0, we have

$$f(y;1) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi y}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}y\right) = \frac{1}{2^{\frac{1}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)} y^{\frac{1}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right).$$

Suppose the statement holds for n-1, that is

$$f(y; n-1) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \Gamma(\frac{n-1}{2})} y^{\frac{n-1}{2}-1} \exp(-\frac{y}{2}), & y > 0, \\ 0, & \text{otherwise,} \end{cases}$$

We consider  $y_n = y_{n-1} + x_n^2$  such that  $y_{n-1} \sim \chi^2(n-1)$  and  $x_n \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$  are independent. Let  $F_1$  be the corresponding cdf of f(y;1). Then the cfd of  $y_n$  is

$$\Pr(y_n \le z)$$

$$= \int_0^z \int_0^{z-y} f_{n-1}(y) f_1(x) \, dx \, dy$$

$$= \int_0^z (F_1(z-y) - F_1(0)) f_{n-1}(y) \, dx \, dy$$

$$= \int_0^z F_1(z-y) f_{n-1}(y) \, dy$$

and the pdf of  $y_n$  is (let y = tz)

$$\begin{split} & \int_{0}^{z} \frac{1}{2^{\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)} (z-y)^{\frac{1}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z-y}{2}\right) \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{n-1}{2}\right)} y^{\frac{n-1}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}y \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{1}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)} \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{n-1}{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{z} (z-y)^{\frac{1}{2}-1} y^{\frac{n-1}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}y \\ &= \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right) z^{\frac{n-1}{2}}}{2^{\frac{n}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{n-1}{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{1} (1-t)^{\frac{1}{2}-1} t^{\frac{n-1}{2}-1} \, \mathrm{d}t \\ &= \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right) z^{\frac{n-1}{2}}}{2^{\frac{n}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{n-1}{2}\right)} B\left(\frac{n-1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}\right) \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} z^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right). \end{split}$$

**Theorem 4.3.** If the n-component vector  $\mathbf{y}$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\nu, \mathbf{T})$  with  $\mathbf{T} \succ \mathbf{0}$ , then

$$\mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{T}^{-1} \mathbf{y} \sim \chi_n^2 \left( \boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top} \mathbf{T}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\nu} \right)$$

If  $\nu = 0$ , the distribution is the central  $\chi^2$ -distribution.

*Proof.* Let  $\mathbf{C}$  be a non-singular matrix such that  $\mathbf{C}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{C}^{\top} = \mathbf{I}$ . Define  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{y}$ , then  $\mathbf{z}$  is normally distributed with mean

$$\mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}] = \mathbf{C} \boldsymbol{\nu} \triangleq \boldsymbol{\lambda}$$

and covariance matrix

$$\mathbb{E}\left[(\mathbf{z} - \boldsymbol{\lambda})(\mathbf{z} - \boldsymbol{\lambda})^\top\right] = \mathbf{C}\mathbb{E}\left[(\mathbf{y} - \boldsymbol{\nu})(\mathbf{y} - \boldsymbol{\nu})^\top\right]\mathbf{C}^\top = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{C}^\top = \mathbf{I}.$$

Then we have

$$\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{T}^{-1}\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{z}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{-\top}\mathbf{T}^{-1}\mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{z}^{\top}\left(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{C}^{\top}\right)^{-1}\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{z}^{\top}\mathbf{z},$$

which is the sum of squares of the components of  $\mathbf{z}$ . Similarly, we have  $\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top}\mathbf{T}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\nu} = \boldsymbol{\lambda}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\lambda}$ . Thus, the random variable  $\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{T}^{-1}\mathbf{y}$  is distributed as  $\sum_{i=1}^{n}z_{i}^{2}$ , where  $z_{1},\ldots,z_{n}$  are independently normally distributed with means  $\lambda_{1},\ldots,\lambda_{n}$  respectively, and variances 1. By definition this is the noncentral  $\chi^{2}$ -distribution with noncentrality parameter  $\sum_{i=1}^{n}\lambda_{i}^{2}=\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top}\mathbf{T}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\nu}$ .

**Theorem 4.4.** The probability density function (pdf) for the noncentral  $\chi^2$ -distribution is

$$f(v; p, \tau^2) = \begin{cases} \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\tau^2 + v)\right)v^{\frac{p}{2} - 1}}{2^{\frac{p}{2}}\sqrt{\pi}} \sum_{\beta=0}^{\infty} \frac{\tau^{2\beta}v^{\beta}\Gamma\left(\beta + \frac{1}{2}\right)}{(2\beta)!\Gamma\left(\frac{p}{2} + \beta\right)} & v > 0, \\ 0, & otherwise. \end{cases}$$

*Proof.*  $\chi_p^2(\tau^2)$  with  $\tau^2 = \sum_{i=1}^p \lambda_i^2$  can be constructed via  $\mathbf{y}^\top \mathbf{y}$  with  $\mathbf{y} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\lambda}, \mathbf{I})$ . Let  $\mathbf{Q}$  be  $p \times p$  orthogonal matrix with elements of the first row being

$$q_{i1} = \frac{\lambda_i}{\sqrt{(\boldsymbol{\lambda})^\top \boldsymbol{\lambda}}}$$

for i = 1, ..., p. Then  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{Q}\mathbf{y}$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\tau}, \mathbf{I})$ , where

$$oldsymbol{ au} = egin{bmatrix} au \ 0 \ dots \ 0 \end{bmatrix},$$

where  $\tau = \sqrt{\boldsymbol{\lambda}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\lambda}}$ . Let  $\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{y} = \mathbf{z}^{\top} \mathbf{z} = \sum_{i=1}^{p} z_i^2$ . Then  $w = \sum_{i=2}^{p} z_i^2$  has a  $\chi^2$ -distribution with p-1 degrees of freedom, and  $z_1$  and w have as joint density

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(z_1 - \tau)^2\right) \frac{1}{2^{\frac{p-1}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{p-1}{2}\right)} w^{\frac{p-1}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{w}{2}\right) 
= C \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\left(\tau^2 + z_1^2 + w\right)\right) w^{\frac{p-3}{2}} \exp\left(\tau z_1\right) 
= C \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\left(\tau^2 + z_1^2 + w\right)\right) w^{\frac{p-3}{2}} \sum_{\alpha=0}^{\infty} \frac{\tau^{\alpha} z_1^{\alpha}}{\alpha!}$$

where  $C^{-1} = 2^{\frac{p}{2}} \sqrt{\pi} \Gamma\left(\frac{p-1}{2}\right)$ . The joint density of  $v = w + z_1^2$  and  $z_1$  is obtained by substituting  $w = v - z_1^2$  (the Jacobian being 1):

$$C \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\left(\tau^2 + v\right)\right) \left(v - z_1^2\right)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} \sum_{\alpha=0}^{\infty} \frac{\tau^{\alpha} z_1^{\alpha}}{\alpha!}.$$

The joint density of v and  $u = z_1/\sqrt{v}$  is  $(dz_1 = \sqrt{v}du)$ 

$$C\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\left(\tau^2+v\right)\right)v^{\frac{p-2}{2}}(1-u^2)^{\frac{p-3}{2}}\sum_{\alpha}^{\infty}\frac{\tau^{\alpha}v^{\frac{\alpha}{2}}u^{\alpha}}{\alpha!}.$$

The admissible range of z given v is  $-\sqrt{v}$  to  $\sqrt{v}$ , and the admissible range of u is -1 to 1. When we integrate above joint density with respect to u term by term, the terms for a odd integrate to 0, since such a term is an odd function of u. In the other integrations we substitute  $u = \sqrt{s} (du = \frac{\sqrt{s}}{2} ds)$  to obtain

$$\int_{-1}^{1} (1 - u^2)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} u^{2\beta} du$$

$$= 2 \int_{0}^{1} (1 - u^2)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} u^{2\beta} du$$

$$= \int_{0}^{1} (1 - s)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} s^{\beta - \frac{1}{2}} ds$$

$$= B \left( \frac{p-1}{2}, \beta + \frac{1}{2} \right)$$

$$= \frac{\Gamma(\frac{p-1}{2})\Gamma(\beta + \frac{1}{2})}{\Gamma(\frac{p}{2} + \beta)}$$

by the usual properties of the beta and gamma functions. Thus the density of v is

$$\frac{1}{2^{\frac{p}{2}}\sqrt{\pi}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}(\tau^2+v)\right)v^{\frac{p}{2}-1}\sum_{\beta=0}^{\infty}\frac{\tau^{2\beta}v^{\beta}\Gamma\left(\beta+\frac{1}{2}\right)}{(2\beta)!\,\Gamma\left(\frac{p}{2}+\beta\right)}$$

for v > 0.

**Theorem 4.5.** Define the likelihood ratio criterion as

$$\lambda = \frac{\max_{\mathbf{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}_0, \mathbf{\Sigma})}{\max_{\boldsymbol{\mu} \in \mathbb{R}^p, \mathbf{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \mathbf{\Sigma})},$$

where

$$L(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}) = (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp \left( -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}) \right).$$

then we have

$$\lambda^{\frac{2}{N}} = \frac{1}{1 + T^2/(N-1)},$$

where  $T^2 = N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} \mathbf{S}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)$ .

*Proof.* The maximum likelihood estimators of  $\mu$  and  $\Sigma$  are

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}_{\Omega} = \bar{\mathbf{x}}$$
 and  $\hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}_{\Omega} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$ 

If we restrict  $\mu = \mu_0$ , the likelihood function is maximized at

$$\hat{\mathbf{\Sigma}}_{\omega} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0})^{\top}.$$

Furthermore, we have

$$\max_{\boldsymbol{\mu} \in \mathbb{R}^p, \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}) = (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\Omega}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} pN \right)$$

because of

$$\begin{split} &\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\mu}})^{\top} \hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}_{\Omega}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\mu}}) \\ = & \operatorname{tr} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}_{\Omega}^{-1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\mu}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\mu}})^{\top} \right) \\ = & \operatorname{tr} (n\mathbf{I}_{n}) = np. \end{split}$$

Similarly, we also have

$$\max_{\mathbf{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}_0, \mathbf{\Sigma}) = (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\mathbf{\Sigma}_{\omega}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} pN \right).$$

Thus the likelihood ratio criterion is

$$\lambda = \frac{(2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\Omega}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}pN\right)}{(2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\omega}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}pN\right)} = \frac{\left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\omega}) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}}{\left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\Omega}) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}}$$

$$= \frac{\left( \det\left(\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}\right) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}}{\left( \det\left(\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0})^{\top}\right) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}} = \frac{\left( \det(\mathbf{A}) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}}{\left( \det(\mathbf{A} + N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0})(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{0})^{\top}) \right)^{\frac{N}{2}}}$$

where  $\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} = (N-1)\mathbf{S}$ . Hence, we obtain

$$\lambda^{\frac{2}{N}} = \frac{\det(\mathbf{A})}{\det(\mathbf{A} + (\sqrt{N}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0))(\sqrt{N}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top}))}$$
$$= \frac{1}{1 + N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} \mathbf{A}^{-1}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)}$$
$$= \frac{1}{1 + T^2/(N - 1)}$$

where  $T^2 = N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} \mathbf{S}^{-1}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0) = (N-1)N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} \mathbf{A}^{-1}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)$  and we use the property of Schur complement to obtain

$$\det \begin{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{u} \\ -\mathbf{u}^{\top} & 1 \end{bmatrix} \end{pmatrix} = \det \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{A} + \mathbf{u}\mathbf{u}^{\top} \end{pmatrix} = \det \begin{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -\mathbf{u}^{\top} \\ \mathbf{u} & \mathbf{A} \end{bmatrix} \end{pmatrix} = \det(\mathbf{A}) \begin{pmatrix} 1 + \mathbf{u}^{\top}\mathbf{A}^{-1}\mathbf{u} \end{pmatrix}$$

with  $\mathbf{u} = \sqrt{N}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)$ . Recall that The decomposition

$$\mathbf{M} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{B} \\ \mathbf{C} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix}$$

means we have  $\det(\mathbf{M}) = \det(\mathbf{D}) \det(\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C})$ .

**Lemma 4.1.** For any  $p \times p$  non-singular matrices C and H and any vector k, we have

$$\mathbf{k}^{\top}\mathbf{H}^{-1}\mathbf{k} = (\mathbf{C}\mathbf{k})^{\top}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{H}\mathbf{C}^{\top})^{-1}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{k}).$$

*Proof.* We have 
$$(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{k})^{\top}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{H}\mathbf{C}^{\top})^{-1}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{k}) = \mathbf{k}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{\top}(\mathbf{C}^{\top})^{-1}(\mathbf{H})^{-1}\mathbf{C}^{-1}(\mathbf{C}\mathbf{k}) = \mathbf{k}^{\top}\mathbf{H}^{-1}\mathbf{k}$$
.

Remark 4.1. This lemma means

$$T^{*2} = N(\bar{\mathbf{x}}^* - \mathbf{0})^{\top} (\mathbf{S}^*)^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}}^* - \mathbf{0}) = N(\mathbf{C}\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \mathbf{0})^{\top} (\mathbf{C}\mathbf{S}\mathbf{C})^{-1} (\mathbf{C}\bar{\mathbf{x}}^* - \mathbf{0}) = N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \mathbf{0})^{\top} \mathbf{S}^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}}^* - \mathbf{0}) = T^2.$$

**Theorem 4.6.** Suppose  $\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_m$  are independent with  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}$  distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{\Gamma}\mathbf{w}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{\Phi})$ , where  $\mathbf{w}_{\alpha}$  is an r-component vector. Let  $\mathbf{H} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{m} \mathbf{w}_{\alpha} \mathbf{w}_{\alpha}^{\top}$  assumed non-singular,  $\mathbf{G} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{m} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} \mathbf{w}_{\alpha}^{\top} \mathbf{H}^{-1}$  and

$$\mathbf{C} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{m} (\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \mathbf{G}\mathbf{w}_{\alpha})(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \mathbf{G}\mathbf{w}_{\alpha})^{\top} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{m} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{\top} - \mathbf{G}\mathbf{H}\mathbf{G}^{\top}.$$

Then C is distributed as

$$\sum_{\alpha=1}^{m-r} \mathbf{u}_{\alpha} \mathbf{u}_{\alpha}^{\top}$$

where  $\mathbf{u}_1, \dots, \mathbf{u}_{m-r}$  are independently distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Phi})$  independently of  $\mathbf{G}$ .

*Proof.* Theorem 4.3.3 of "Theodore W. Anderson. An Introduction to Multivariate Statistical Analysis. John Wiley & Sons Inc; 3rd Edition."

**Theorem 4.7.** Let  $T^2 = \mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{S}^{-1} \mathbf{y}$ , where  $\mathbf{y}$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\nu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and  $n\mathbf{S}$  is independently distributed as  $\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$  with  $\mathbf{z}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_n$  independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Then the random variable

$$\frac{T^2}{n} \cdot \frac{n-p+1}{p}$$

is distributed as a noncentral F-distribution with p and n-p+1 degrees of freedom and noncentrality parameter  $\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\nu}$ . If  $\boldsymbol{\nu} = \mathbf{0}$ , the distribution is central F.

**Theorem 4.8.** Let  $T^2 = \mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{S}^{-1} \mathbf{y}$ , where  $\mathbf{y}$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\nu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and  $n\mathbf{S}$  is independently distributed as  $\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$  with  $\mathbf{z}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_n$  independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Then the random variable

$$\frac{T^2}{n} \cdot \frac{n-p+1}{p}$$

is distributed as a noncentral F-distribution with p and n-p+1 degrees of freedom and noncentrality parameter  $\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\nu}$ . If  $\boldsymbol{\nu} = \mathbf{0}$ , the distribution is central F.

*Proof.* Let **D** be a non-singular matrix such that  $\mathbf{D}\Sigma\mathbf{D}^{\top} = \mathbf{I}$ , and define

$$\mathbf{v}^* = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{v}, \quad \mathbf{S}^* = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{S}\mathbf{D}^\top, \quad \boldsymbol{\nu}^* = \mathbf{D}\boldsymbol{\nu}.$$

Lemma 4.1 means

$$T^2 = (\mathbf{y}^*)^\top (\mathbf{S}^*)^{-1} \mathbf{y}^*,$$

where  $\mathbf{y}^*$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\nu}^*, \mathbf{I})$  and

$$n\mathbf{S}^* = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^* (\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^*)^{\top} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N-1} \mathbf{D} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} (\mathbf{D} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha})^{\top}$$

with  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^* = \mathbf{D}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I})$ . We also have

$$\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\nu} = (\mathbf{D} \boldsymbol{\nu})^{\top} (\mathbf{D} \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \mathbf{D}^{\top})^{-1} (\mathbf{D} \boldsymbol{\nu}^{*}) = (\boldsymbol{\nu}^{*})^{\top} \boldsymbol{\nu}^{*}.$$

Let the first row of a  $p \times p$  orthogonal matrix **Q** be defined by

$$q_{i1} = \frac{y_i^*}{\sqrt{(\mathbf{y}^*)^\top \mathbf{y}^*}}$$

for i = 1, ..., p. Since **Q** depends on  $\mathbf{y}^*$ , it is a random matrix. Now let

$$\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{Q}\mathbf{y}^*$$
 and  $\mathbf{B} = \mathbf{Q}(n\mathbf{S}^*)\mathbf{Q}^\top$ ,

where n = N - 1. The definition of **Q** means

$$u_1 = \sum_{i=1}^{p} q_{1i} y_i^* = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{p} (y_i^*)^2}{\sqrt{(\mathbf{y}^*)^{\top} \mathbf{y}^*}} = \sqrt{(\mathbf{y}^*)^{\top} \mathbf{y}^*}$$

and

$$u_j = \sum_{i=1}^p q_{ji} y_i^* = \sqrt{(\mathbf{y}^*)^\top \mathbf{y}^*} \sum_{i=1}^p q_{ji} q_{1i} = 0$$

for  $j = 2, \ldots, p$ . Then

$$\frac{T^2}{n} = \frac{(\mathbf{y}^*)^\top (\mathbf{S}^*)^{-1} \mathbf{y}^*}{n} = (\mathbf{Q} \mathbf{u})^\top (\mathbf{Q}^\top \mathbf{B} \mathbf{Q})^{-1} \mathbf{Q}^\top \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}^\top \mathbf{Q}^\top (\mathbf{Q}^\top)^{-1} \mathbf{B}^{-1} \mathbf{Q}^{-1} \mathbf{Q}^\top \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}^\top \mathbf{B}^{-1} \mathbf{u}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} u_1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} b^{11} & b^{12} & \dots & b^{1p} \\ b^{21} & b^{22} & \dots & b^{2p} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ b^{p1} & b^{p2} & \dots & b^{pp} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} u_1 \\ 0 \\ \vdots \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = u_1^2 b^{11}$$

where  $b^{ij}$  is the (i,j)-th entry of  $\mathbf{B}^{-1}$ . Using Schur Complement, we have

$$\frac{1}{b^{11}} = b_{11} - \mathbf{b}_{(1)}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1} \mathbf{b}_{(1)} \triangleq b_{11.2,...,p}$$
 (6)

with

$$\mathbf{B} = \begin{bmatrix} b_{11} & \mathbf{b}_{(1)}^{\top} \\ \mathbf{b}_{(1)} & \mathbf{B}_{22} \end{bmatrix}$$

and

$$\frac{T^2}{n} = \frac{u_1^2}{b_{11.2,\dots,p}} = \frac{(\mathbf{y}^*)^\top \mathbf{y}^*}{b_{11.2,\dots,p}}.$$

The conditional distribution of  $\mathbf{B}$  given  $\mathbf{Q}$  is that of

$$\mathbf{B} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{Q} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{*} (\mathbf{Q} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{*})^{\top} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{v}_{\alpha}^{*} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha}^{*})^{\top} = \begin{bmatrix} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha 1}^{*})^{2} & \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 1}^{*} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 2-p}^{*})^{\top} \\ \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 1}^{*} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 2-p}^{*}) & \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 2-p}^{*}) (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha, 2-p}^{*})^{\top} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} b_{11} & \mathbf{b}_{(1)}^{\top} \\ \mathbf{b}_{(1)} & \mathbf{B}_{22} \end{bmatrix},$$

where  $\mathbf{v}_{\alpha} = \mathbf{Q}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{*}$  are independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I})$  since  $\mathbf{Q}\mathbf{D}\mathbf{\Sigma}\mathbf{D}^{\top}\mathbf{Q}^{\top} = \mathbf{I}$ . We denote

$$\mathbf{G} = b_{(1)}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{m} \mathbf{v}_{\alpha,1}^{*} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha,2-p}^{*})^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1}$$

By Theorem 4.6, the random variable

$$b_{11.2,...,p} = b_{11} - \left(b_{(1)}^{\top} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1}\right) \mathbf{B}_{22} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1} b_{(1)}$$
$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} (\mathbf{v}_{\alpha 1}^{*})^{2} - \mathbf{G} \mathbf{B}_{22}^{-1} \mathbf{G}^{\top}$$

is conditionally distributed as

$$\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n-(p-1)} w_{\alpha}^2$$

where conditionally the  $w_{\alpha}^2$  are independent, each with the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$ ; that is,  $b_{11.2,\ldots,p}$  is conditionally distributed as  $\chi^2$  with n-(p-1) degrees of freedom. Since the conditional distribution of  $b_{11.2,\ldots,p}$  does not depend on  $\mathbf{Q}$ , it is unconditionally distributed as  $\chi^2$ . The quantity  $(\mathbf{y}^*)^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{y}^*$  has a noncentral  $\chi^2$ -distribution with p degrees of freedom and noncentrality parameter  $(\boldsymbol{\nu}^*)^{\mathsf{T}}\boldsymbol{\nu}^* = \boldsymbol{\nu}^{\mathsf{T}}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\boldsymbol{\nu}^{\mathsf{T}}$  Then T is distributed as the ratio of a noncentral  $\chi^2$  and an independent  $\chi^2$ .

**Remark 4.2.** The equation (6) is based on the fact

$$\mathbf{M} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{B} \\ \mathbf{C} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix}$$
(7)

and

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{M}^{-1} &= \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{B} \\ \mathbf{C} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix}^{-1} = \begin{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{D} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \end{pmatrix}^{-1} \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & \mathbf{0} \\ -\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} (\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C})^{-1} & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{D}^{-1} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{I} & -\mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} (\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C})^{-1} & -(\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C})^{-1}\mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \\ -\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} \left(\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C}\right)^{-1} & \mathbf{D}^{-1} + \mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C} \left(\mathbf{A} - \mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1}\mathbf{C}\right)^{-1}\mathbf{B}\mathbf{D}^{-1} \end{bmatrix}. \end{split}$$

**Theorem 4.9.** Let u be distributed according to the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with a degrees of freedom and w be distributed according to the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with b degrees of freedom. The density of v = u/(u+w), when u and w are independent is

$$\frac{1}{B\left(\frac{a}{2}, \frac{b}{2}\right)} v^{\frac{a}{2} - 1} (1 - v)^{\frac{b}{2} - 1},\tag{8}$$

where  $B(\alpha, \beta) = \int_0^1 t^{\alpha - 1} (1 - t)^{\beta - 1} dt$ .

*Proof.* Let

$$v = \frac{u}{u+w}$$
 and  $z = u+w$ .

Then u = vz, w = (1 - v)z and

$$\det(\mathbf{J}(v,z)) = \det\left(\begin{bmatrix} \frac{\partial u}{\partial v} & \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \\ \frac{\partial w}{\partial v} & \frac{\partial w}{\partial z} \end{bmatrix}\right) = \det\left(\begin{bmatrix} z & v \\ -z & 1-v \end{bmatrix}\right) = z.$$

Since v and w are independent, the joint density of u and w is

$$f_{u,v}(u,w) = \frac{1}{2^{\frac{a}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{a}{2}\right)}u^{\frac{a}{2}-1}\exp\left(-\frac{u}{2}\right) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{b}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{b}{2}\right)}w^{\frac{b}{2}-1}\exp\left(-\frac{w}{2}\right)$$

and the joint density of v and z is

$$\begin{split} f_{v,z}(v,z) = & f_{u,v}(vz, (1-v)z) \det(\mathbf{J}(v,z)) \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{a}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a}{2}\right)} (vz)^{\frac{a}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{vz}{2}\right) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{b}{2}\right)} ((1-v)z)^{\frac{b}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{(1-v)z}{2}\right) \cdot z \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{a+b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{b}{2}\right)} v^{\frac{a}{2}-1} \cdot (1-v)^{\frac{b}{2}-1} z^{\frac{a+b}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right). \end{split}$$

Consider that the density of  $\chi^2$ -distribution with a+b degrees of freedom, we have

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{2^{\frac{a+b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a+b}{2}\right)} z^{\frac{a+b}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}z = 1.$$

Hence,

$$\begin{split} f_z(z) &= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f_{v,z}(v,z) \, \mathrm{d}z \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{a+b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{b}{2}\right)} v^{\frac{a}{2}-1} (1-v)^{\frac{b}{2}-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} z^{\frac{a+b}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{z}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}z \\ &= \frac{2^{\frac{a+b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a+b}{2}\right)}{2^{\frac{a+b}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{a}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{b}{2}\right)} v^{\frac{a}{2}-1} (1-v)^{\frac{b}{2}-1} \\ &= \frac{1}{B\left(\frac{a}{2} + \frac{b}{2}\right)} v^{\frac{a}{2}-1} (1-v)^{\frac{b}{2}-1}. \end{split}$$

**Remark 4.3.** Beta distribution is a conjugate prior the binomial random variable. The binomial random variable X with parameters n and  $\theta$  has the probability mass function

$$f(X = k \mid n, \theta) = C_n^k \theta^k (1 - \theta)^{n-k}.$$

Let  $\theta$  follows Beta distribution (prior distribution) with parameters a and b whose density function is

$$g(\theta|a,b) = \frac{1}{B(a,b)} v^{a-1} (1-v)^{b-1}.$$

Then we can write the density for the posterior distribution of  $\theta$  by Bayes rule

$$P(\theta \mid X = k) = \frac{P(X = k \mid \theta)P(\theta)}{P(X = k)}$$

$$\begin{split} &= \frac{\mathbf{C}_n^k \theta^k (1-\theta)^{n-k} \cdot \frac{1}{B(a,b)} \theta^{a-1} (1-\theta)^{b-1}}{P(X=k)} \\ &= \frac{\mathbf{C}_n^k}{P(X=k) B\left(a,b\right)} \theta^{k+a-1} (1-\theta)^{n-k+b-1}. \end{split}$$

Since  $C_n^k/(P(X=k)B(a,b))$  is independent on  $\theta$ , it follows Beta distribution with parameters k+a and n-k+b is density.

**Theorem 4.10.** Let  $x_1, x_2, ...$  be a sequence of independently identically distributed random vectors with mean vector  $\boldsymbol{\mu}$  and covariance matrix  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ . Let

$$\hat{\mathbf{x}}_N = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^N \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}, \qquad \hat{\mathbf{S}}_N = \frac{1}{N-1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^N (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}$$

and

$$T_N^2 = N(\bar{\mathbf{x}}_N - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} \mathbf{S}_N^{-1} (\bar{\mathbf{x}}_N - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0).$$

Then the limiting distribution of  $T_N^2$  as  $N \to \infty$  is the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with p degrees of freedom if  $\mu = \mu_0$ .

*Proof.* By the central limit theorem, the limiting distribution of  $\sqrt{N}(\bar{\mathbf{x}}_N - \boldsymbol{\mu})$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . The sample covariance matrix converges stochastically to  $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ . Then the limiting distribution of  $T^2$  is the distribution of

$$\mathbf{y}^{ op} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{y}$$

where y has the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \Sigma)$ . The theorem follows from Theorem 4.3.

**Lemma 4.2.** If  $\mathbf{v}$  is a vector of p components and if  $\mathbf{B}$  is a non-singular  $p \times p$  matrix, then  $\mathbf{v}^{\top} \mathbf{B}^{-1} \mathbf{v}$  is the nonzero root of

$$\det(\mathbf{v}\mathbf{v}^{\top} - \lambda \mathbf{B}) = 0.$$

*Proof.* The non-zero root  $\lambda_1$  of  $\det(\mathbf{v}\mathbf{v}^\top - \lambda\mathbf{B}) = 0$  associate with vector  $\boldsymbol{\beta} \neq \mathbf{0}$  satisfying

$$(\mathbf{v}\mathbf{v}^{\top} - \lambda_1 \mathbf{B})\boldsymbol{\beta} = \mathbf{0} \Longrightarrow \mathbf{v}\mathbf{v}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\beta} = \lambda_1 \mathbf{B}\boldsymbol{\beta} \Longrightarrow (\mathbf{v}^{\top}\mathbf{B}^{-1}\mathbf{v}) \mathbf{v}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\beta} = \lambda_1 \mathbf{v}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\beta}.$$

We can obtain that  $\mathbf{v}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\beta} \neq 0$ , otherwise  $(\mathbf{v}\mathbf{v}^{\top} - \lambda_1 \mathbf{B})\boldsymbol{\beta} = \mathbf{0}$  means  $\mathbf{B}\boldsymbol{\beta} = \mathbf{0}$  which is impossible since  $\mathbf{B}$  is non-singular. Hence  $\lambda_1 = \mathbf{v}^{\top}\mathbf{B}^{-1}\mathbf{v}$ .

**Remark 4.4.** Using this lemma with  $\mathbf{v} = \sqrt{N}(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)$  and  $\mathbf{B} = \mathbf{A}$ , we can prove  $T^2/(N-1)$  is the non-zero root of det  $(N(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)(\bar{\mathbf{x}} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_0)^{\top} - \lambda \mathbf{A}) = 0$ .

**Lemma 4.3.** For any positive definite matrix  $\mathbf{S} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  and  $\mathbf{y}, \boldsymbol{\gamma} \in \mathbb{R}^{p}$ , we have

$$(\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{y})^{2} \leq (\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma})(\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{y}).$$

*Proof.* For  $\gamma = 0$ , the result is trivial. Otherwise, let

$$b = \frac{\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top} \mathbf{y}}{\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top} \mathbf{S} \boldsymbol{\gamma}}.$$

Then we have

$$0 \le (\mathbf{y} - b\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma})^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}(\mathbf{y} - b\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma})$$

$$= \mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - b\mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma} - b\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{S}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - b^{2}\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{S}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma}$$

$$= \mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - 2b\mathbf{y}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\gamma} + b^{2}\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma}$$

$$= \mathbf{y}^{\top}\mathbf{S}^{-1}\mathbf{y} - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{y})^{2}}{\boldsymbol{\gamma}^{\top}\mathbf{S}\boldsymbol{\gamma}},$$

which implies the desired result.

**Theorem 4.11.** Let  $\{\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)}\}$  for  $\alpha=1,\ldots,N_i,\ i=1,\ldots,q$  be samples from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)},\boldsymbol{\Sigma}),\ i=1,\ldots,q,$  respectively and suppose

$$\sum_{i=1}^q \beta_i \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)} = \boldsymbol{\mu}.$$

where  $\beta_1, \ldots, \beta_q$  are given scalars and  $\mu$  is a given vector. Define the criterion

$$T^{2} = c \left( \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \mathbf{S}^{-1} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right)^{\top}$$

where

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} = \frac{1}{N_i} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_i} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)}, \qquad \frac{1}{c} = \sum_{i=1}^{q} \frac{\beta_i^2}{N_i}$$

and

$$\left(\sum_{i=1}^{q} N_i - q\right) S = \sum_{i=1}^{q} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_i} \left(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)}\right) \left(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)}\right)^{\top}.$$

Then this  $T^2$  has the  $T^2$ -distribution with  $\sum_{i=1}^q N_i - q$  degrees of freedom.

*Proof.* Since  $\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , we have

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)}, \frac{1}{N_i}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right) \implies \beta_i(\bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_i) \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, \frac{\beta_i^2}{N_i}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right).$$

and

$$\sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} = \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \left( \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)} \right) \sim \mathcal{N} \left( \mathbf{0}, \sum_{i=1}^{q} \frac{\beta_{i}^{2}}{N_{i}} \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \right) \Longrightarrow \sqrt{c} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \sim \mathcal{N} \left( \mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \right).$$

On the other hand, we can write

$$\sum_{i=1}^q \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_i} \left(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)}\right) \left(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)}\right)^\top = \sum_{i=1}^q \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_i-1} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(i)} (\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(i)})^\top$$

where  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(i)}$  are independent and  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(i)} \sim \mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ . Hence,

$$T^{2} = \sqrt{c} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \mathbf{S}^{-1} \left( \sqrt{c} \left( \sum_{i=1}^{q} \beta_{i} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(i)} - \boldsymbol{\mu} \right) \right)^{\top}$$

has the  $T^2$ -distribution with  $\sum_{i=1}^q N_i - q$  degrees of freedom.

**Lemma 4.4.** Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{x}_m$  be independent samples from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}_{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\alpha})$  for  $i = 1, \ldots, m$ . Define

$$\mathbf{z}_1 = \sum_{\alpha=1}^N a_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha} \quad and \quad \mathbf{z}_2 = \sum_{\alpha=1}^N b_{\alpha} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha},$$

then

$$\operatorname{Cov}(\mathbf{z}_1, \mathbf{z}_2) = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} a_{\alpha} b_{\alpha} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{\alpha}.$$

*Proof.* The definitions mean

$$\mathbf{z}_1 = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 \mathbf{I} & a_2 \mathbf{I} & \dots & a_N \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_1 \\ \mathbf{x}_2 \\ \dots \\ \mathbf{x}_N \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{z}_2 = \begin{bmatrix} b_1 \mathbf{I} & b_2 \mathbf{I} & \dots & b_N \mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_1 \\ \mathbf{x}_2 \\ \dots \\ \mathbf{x}_N \end{bmatrix},$$

then

$$\operatorname{Cov}(\mathbf{z}_{1}, \mathbf{z}_{2}) = \begin{bmatrix} a_{1}\mathbf{I} & a_{2}\mathbf{I} & \dots & a_{N}\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \operatorname{Cov} \begin{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_{1} \\ \mathbf{x}_{2} \\ \dots \\ \mathbf{x}_{N} \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_{1} \\ \mathbf{x}_{2} \\ \dots \\ \mathbf{x}_{N} \end{bmatrix} \end{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} b_{1}\mathbf{I} \\ b_{2}\mathbf{I} \\ \vdots \\ b_{N}\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix}$$
$$= \begin{bmatrix} a_{1}\mathbf{I} & a_{2}\mathbf{I} & \dots & a_{N}\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{1} & \mathbf{0} & \dots & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{2} & \dots & \mathbf{0} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \mathbf{0} & \mathbf{0} & \dots & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{N} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} b_{1}\mathbf{I} \\ b_{2}\mathbf{I} \\ \vdots \\ b_{N}\mathbf{I} \end{bmatrix}$$
$$= \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} a_{\alpha}b_{\alpha}\mathbf{\Sigma}_{\alpha}.$$

**Lemma 4.5.** Let  $\{\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(i)}\}$  for  $\alpha = 1, ..., N_i$  be independent samples from  $\mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(i)}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_i)$  for i = 1, 2, respectively. We suppose  $N_1 < N_2$  and define

$$\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} = \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1 N_2}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_2} \sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_2} \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)},$$

for  $\alpha = 1, ..., N_1$ . Then we have

$$\bar{\mathbf{y}} = \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} = \bar{\mathbf{x}}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}_{\alpha}^{(2)}$$

and

$$Cov(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{y}_{\alpha'}) = \begin{cases} \mathbf{\Sigma}_1 + \frac{N_1}{N_2} \mathbf{\Sigma}_2, & \alpha = \alpha', \\ \mathbf{0}, & otherwise. \end{cases}$$

*Proof.* We have

$$\begin{split} &\bar{\mathbf{y}} = \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha} \\ &= \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_1} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1 N_2}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_2} \sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_2} \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} \right) \\ &= \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(1)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_1} \left( \sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1 N_2}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} \right) \\ &= \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(1)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_1} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N_1} \sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1 N_2}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} \\ &= \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(1)} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(2)}. \end{split}$$

We first consider the case of  $\alpha = \alpha'$ . The independence means the covariance matrix of  $[\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)}; \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}]^{\top}$  has the form of

$$\begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_1 & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & \times \end{bmatrix},$$

where

$$\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} = -\sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}}\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1N_2}}\sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1}\mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_2}\sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_2}\mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)}.$$

Hence, we only needs to focus on the covariance matrix of

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} &= -\sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_{1}} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_{1}} \sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_{2}} \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} \\ &= \sum_{\gamma=1}^{\alpha-1} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right) \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} + \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \right) \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} \\ &+ \sum_{\gamma=\alpha+1}^{N_{1}} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right) \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} + \sum_{\gamma=N_{1}+1}^{N_{2}} \left( -\frac{1}{N_{2}} \right) \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} \end{aligned}$$

Lemma 4.4 means

$$\operatorname{Cov}(\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}) = \left( (\alpha - 1) \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right)^{2} + \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \right)^{2} \right. \\
+ \left. (N_{1} - \alpha) \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right)^{2} + \left( N_{2} - N_{1} \right) \sum_{\gamma = N_{1} + 1}^{N_{2}} \left( -\frac{1}{N_{2}} \right)^{2} \right) \mathbf{\Sigma}_{2} \\
= \left( (N_{1} - 1) \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right)^{2} + \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \right)^{2} + \frac{(N_{2} - N_{1})^{2}}{N_{2}^{2}} \right) \mathbf{\Sigma}_{2} \\
= \frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{2},$$

which means  $Cov(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}, \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}) = \mathbf{\Sigma}_1 + (N_1/N_2)\mathbf{\Sigma}_2$ . Then we consider the case of  $\alpha \neq \alpha'$ . We have

$$\begin{split} &\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}] \\ &= &\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_{1}} \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_{2}} \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} - (\boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)}) \\ &= &\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) + \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_{1}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \sum_{\gamma=1}^{N_{2}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) \\ &= &\mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) + \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \right) \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_{1}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) - \frac{1}{N_{2}} \sum_{\gamma=N_{1}+1}^{N_{2}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) \end{split}$$

and

$$\begin{split} &\mathbf{y}_{\alpha'} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha'}] \\ =& \mathbf{x}_{\alpha'}^{(1)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} - \sqrt{\frac{N_1}{N_2}} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\alpha'}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) + \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{N_1 N_2}} - \frac{1}{N_2} \right) \sum_{\beta=1}^{N_1} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\beta}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right) - \frac{1}{N_2} \sum_{\gamma=N_1+1}^{N_2} \left( \mathbf{x}_{\gamma}^{(2)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \right). \end{split}$$

The independence means

$$\begin{split} & \mathbb{E}\left[\left(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}]\right)\left(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha'} - \mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha'}]\right)^{\top}\right] \\ &= -2\sqrt{\frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}}}\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}}\right)\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2} + \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} - \frac{1}{N_{2}}\right)^{2}N_{1}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2} + \frac{N_{2} - N_{1}}{N_{2}^{2}}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2} \\ &= \left(-2\left(\frac{1}{N_{2}} - \frac{\sqrt{N_{1}}}{N_{2}\sqrt{N_{2}}}\right) + \left(\frac{1}{N_{1}N_{2}} - \frac{2}{N_{2}\sqrt{N_{1}N_{2}}} + \frac{1}{N_{2}^{2}}\right)N_{1} + \frac{1}{N_{2}} - \frac{N_{1}}{N_{2}^{2}}\right)\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{2} \\ &= \mathbf{0}. \end{split}$$

## 5 Sample Correlation Coefficients

**Lemma 5.1.** If  $y_1, ..., y_N$  are independently distributed, if

$$\mathbf{y}_{lpha} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{y}_{lpha}^{(1)} \ \mathbf{y}_{lpha}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix}$$

has the density  $f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha})$  and if the conditional density of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)}$  given  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)}$  is  $f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)} \mid \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})$  for  $\alpha = 1, \dots, n$ . Then in the conditional distribution of  $\mathbf{y}_{1}^{(2)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{N}^{(2)}$  given  $\mathbf{y}_{1}^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{N}^{(1)}$ , the random vectors  $\mathbf{y}_{1}^{(2)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{N}^{(2)}$  are independent and the density of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)}$  is  $f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)} \mid \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})$ .

*Proof.* The marginal density of  $\mathbf{y}_1^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N^{(1)}$  is

$$\prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} f_1(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})$$

where  $f_1(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})$  is the marginal density of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)}$ , and the conditional density of  $\mathbf{y}_1^{(2)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N^{(2)}$  given  $\mathbf{y}_1^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_N^{(1)}$  is

$$\frac{\prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha})}{\prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} f_{1}(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})} = \prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} \frac{f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)}, \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)})}{f_{1}(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)})} = \prod_{\alpha=1}^{N} f(\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(2)} \mid \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{(1)}).$$

**Theorem 5.1.** If the pairs  $(z_{11}, z_{21}), \ldots, (z_{1n}, z_{2n})$  are independent and each pair are distributed according to

$$\begin{bmatrix} z_{1\alpha} \\ z_{2\alpha} \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N} \left( \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_1^2 & \sigma_1 \sigma_2 \rho \\ \sigma_1 \sigma_2 \rho & \sigma_2^2 \end{bmatrix} \right), \quad \text{where } \alpha = 1, \dots, n,$$

then given  $z_{11}, z_{12}, \ldots, z_{1n}$ , the conditional distributions of

$$b = \frac{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} z_{2\alpha} z_{1\alpha}}{\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{1\alpha}^{2}} \quad and \quad \frac{u}{\sigma^{2}} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \frac{(z_{2\alpha} - bz_{1\alpha})^{2}}{\sigma^{2}}$$

are  $\mathcal{N}\left(\beta, \sigma^2/c^2\right)$  and  $\chi^2$ -distribution with n-1 degrees of freedom, respectively; and b and u are independent, where

$$\beta = \frac{\rho \sigma_2}{\sigma_1}, \quad \sigma^2 = \sigma_2^2 (1 - \rho^2) \quad and \quad c^2 = \sum_{i=1}^n z_{1\alpha}^2.$$

*Proof.* The conditional distribution of  $z_{2\alpha}$  given  $z_{1\alpha}$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\beta z_{1\alpha}, \sigma^2)$ . Let  $\mathbf{v}_i = [z_{i1}, \dots, z_{in}]^{\top}$  for i = 1, 2. Lemma 5.1 means the density of  $\mathbf{v}_2$  given  $\mathbf{v}_1$  is  $\mathcal{N}(\beta \mathbf{v}_1, \sigma^2 \mathbf{I})$  since  $z_{21}, \dots, z_{2n}$  are independent. We also have

$$\mathbf{v}_1^{\top}(\mathbf{v}_2 - b\mathbf{v}_1) = \mathbf{v}_1^{\top} \left( \mathbf{v}_2 - \frac{\mathbf{v}_1^{\top} \mathbf{v}_2}{\mathbf{v}_1^{\top} \mathbf{v}_1} \mathbf{v}_1 \right) = 0$$

and

$$u = (\mathbf{v}_2 - b\mathbf{v}_1)^{\mathsf{T}}(\mathbf{v}_2 - b\mathbf{v}_1) = \mathbf{v}_2^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{v}_2 - 2b\mathbf{v}_1^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{v}_2 + b^2\mathbf{v}_1^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{v}_1 = \mathbf{v}_2^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{v}_2 - b^2\mathbf{v}_1^{\mathsf{T}}\mathbf{v}_1.$$

Apply Theorem 3.4 with  $x_{\alpha} = z_{2\alpha}$  and  $y_{\alpha} = \sum_{\gamma=1}^{n} c_{\alpha\gamma} z_{2\gamma}$  for  $\alpha = 1, ..., n$ , where the first row of orthogonal matrix **C** is  $(1/c)\mathbf{v}_{1}^{\top}$ . Then  $y_{1}, ..., y_{n}$  are independently normally distributed with variance  $\sigma^{2}$  and means

$$\mathbb{E}[y_1] = \sum_{\gamma=1}^n c_{1\gamma} \mathbb{E}[z_{2\gamma}] = \sum_{\gamma=1}^n c_{1\gamma} \beta z_{1\gamma} = \beta c,$$

and

$$\mathbb{E}[y_{\alpha}] = \sum_{\gamma=1}^{n} c_{\alpha\gamma} \mathbb{E}[z_{2\gamma}] = \sum_{\gamma=1}^{n} c_{\alpha\gamma} \beta z_{1\gamma} = 0.$$

Thus, we have

$$b = \frac{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} z_{2\alpha} z_{1\alpha}}{\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{1\alpha}^{2}} = \frac{\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} c z_{2\alpha} c_{1\alpha}}{c^{2}} = \frac{y_{1}}{c} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(\beta, \frac{\sigma^{2}}{c^{2}}\right).$$

and

$$u = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} z_{2\alpha}^{2} - b^{2} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} z_{1\alpha}^{2} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} y_{\alpha}^{2} - y_{1}^{2} = \sum_{\alpha=2}^{n} y_{\alpha}^{2},$$

which is independent of b. Since we have  $y_{\alpha} \sim \mathcal{N}(0, \sigma^2)$  for  $\alpha = 2, ..., n$ , the random variable  $u/\sigma^2$  has a  $\chi^2$ -distribution with n-1 degrees of freedom.

**Theorem 5.2.** If x and y are independently distributed, x having the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$  and y having the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with m degrees of freedom, then  $t = x/\sqrt{y/m}$  (has t-distribution with m degrees of freedom) has the density

$$\frac{\Gamma(\frac{m+1}{2})}{\sqrt{m\pi}\Gamma(\frac{m}{2})}\left(1+\frac{t^2}{m}\right)^{-\frac{m+1}{2}}.$$

*Proof.* The joint density of x and y is

$$f_{x,y}(x,y) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{x^2}{2}\right) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m}{2}} \Gamma(\frac{m}{2})} y^{\frac{m}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right).$$

The definition of t means  $x = t\sqrt{y/m}$ , then the joint density of t and y is

$$f_{t,y}(t,y) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{t^2 y}{2m}\right) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} y^{\frac{m}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right) \cdot \frac{\mathrm{d}t \sqrt{y/m}}{\mathrm{d}t}$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{t^2 y}{2m}\right) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} y^{\frac{m}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{y}{2}\right) \cdot \left(\frac{y}{m}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m+1}{2}} \sqrt{m\pi} \Gamma\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} \exp\left(-\left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right) y\right) \cdot y^{\frac{m-1}{2}}.$$

$$(9)$$

The density of t can be obtained by integrating out y. Consider the expression of gamma function

$$\Gamma(\alpha) = \int_0^{+\infty} \tilde{t}^{\alpha - 1} \exp(-\tilde{t}) d\tilde{t}$$

$$= \int_0^{+\infty} \left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)^{\alpha - 1} y^{\alpha - 1} \exp\left(-\left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)y\right) \left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right) dy$$

$$= \left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)^{\alpha} \int_0^{+\infty} y^{\alpha - 1} \exp\left(-\left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)y\right) dy$$
(10)

where we use the substitution

$$\tilde{t} = \left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)y.$$

Connecting (9) and (10) with  $\alpha = \frac{m+1}{2}$ , we have

$$\begin{split} f_t(t) &= \int_0^{+\infty} f_{t,y}(t,y) \, \mathrm{d}y \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m}{2}} \sqrt{m\pi} \, \Gamma\left(\frac{m+1}{2}\right)} \int_0^{+\infty} \exp\left(-\left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right) y\right) \cdot y^{\frac{m-1}{2}} \, \mathrm{d}y \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{\frac{m}{2}} \sqrt{m\pi} \, \Gamma\left(\frac{m+1}{2}\right)} \left(\frac{t^2}{2m} + \frac{1}{2}\right)^{-\frac{m+1}{2}} \, \Gamma\left(\frac{m+1}{2}\right) \\ &= \frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{m+1}{2}\right)}{\sqrt{m\pi} \, \Gamma\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} \left(\frac{t^2}{m} + 1\right)^{-\frac{m+1}{2}} \, . \end{split}$$

**Theorem 5.3.** Let us consider the likelihood ratio test of the hypothesis that  $\rho = \rho_0$  based on a sample  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  from the bivariate normal distribution

$$\mathcal{N}\left(\begin{bmatrix} \mu_1 \\ \mu_2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_1^2 & \sigma_1\sigma_2\rho \\ \sigma_1\sigma_2\rho & \sigma_2^2 \end{bmatrix}\right).$$

The set  $\Omega$  consists of  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \sigma_1, \sigma_2$  and  $\rho$  such that

$$\sigma_1 > 0, \quad \sigma_2 > 0 \quad and -1 < \rho < 1$$

and the set  $\omega$  is the subset for which  $\rho = \rho_0$ . The likelihood ratio criterion is

$$\frac{\sup_{\omega} L(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\sup_{\Omega} L(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})} = \left(\frac{(1 - \rho_0^2)(1 - r^2)}{(1 - \rho_0 r)^2}\right)^{\frac{N}{2}},$$

where

$$r = \frac{a_{12}}{\sqrt{a_{11}}\sqrt{a_{22}}}, \quad \mathbf{A} = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})(\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \quad and \quad \bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}.$$

*Proof.* We have shown in the section of  $T^2$ -statistic that the likelihood maximized in  $\Omega$  is

$$\max_{\boldsymbol{\mu} \in \mathbb{R}^p, \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}) = (2\pi)^{-\frac{pN}{2}} \left( \det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\Omega}) \right)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \exp\left( -\frac{1}{2} pN \right)$$

where

$$\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\Omega} = \frac{1}{N} \mathbf{A} \quad \text{with} \quad \bar{\mathbf{x}} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}, \quad \mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad p = 2.$$

Then we have

$$\det(\mathbf{\Sigma}_{\Omega}) = \frac{a_{11}a_{22} - a_{12}a_{21}}{N^2},$$

which implies

$$\max_{\boldsymbol{\mu} \in \mathbb{R}^p, \boldsymbol{\Sigma} \in \mathbb{S}_p^{++}} L(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}) = \frac{N^N \exp{(-N)}}{(2\pi)^N \left(a_{11}a_{22} - a_{12}a_{21}\right)^{\frac{N}{2}}} = \frac{N^N \exp{(-N)}}{(2\pi)^N (1 - r^2)^{\frac{N}{2}} a_{11}^{\frac{N}{2}} a_{22}^{\frac{N}{2}}}.$$

Let  $\sigma^2 = \sigma_1 \sigma_2$  and  $\tau = \sigma_1/\sigma_2$ . Under the null hypothesis  $(\rho = \rho_0)$ , we have

$$\det(\mathbf{\Sigma}) = \sigma_1^2 \sigma_2^2 - \sigma_1^2 \sigma_1^2 \rho_0^2 = \sigma^4 (1 - \rho_0^2), \quad \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} = \frac{1}{1 - \rho_0^2} \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{\sigma_1^2} & -\frac{\rho_0}{\sigma_1 \sigma_2} \\ -\frac{\rho_0}{\sigma_1 \sigma_2} & \frac{1}{\sigma_2^2} \end{bmatrix}$$

and

$$\sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) = \operatorname{tr} (\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{A})$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - \rho_{0}^{2}} \left( \frac{a_{11}}{\sigma_{1}^{2}} - \frac{2\rho_{0}a_{12}}{\sigma_{1}\sigma_{2}} + \frac{a_{22}}{\sigma_{2}^{2}} \right)$$

$$= \frac{1}{(1 - \rho_{0}^{2})\sigma^{2}} \left( \frac{a_{11}}{\tau} - 2\rho_{0}a_{12} + \tau a_{22} \right).$$

Then the likelihood function under the null hypothesis  $(\rho = \rho_0)$  is

$$\frac{1}{(2\pi)^N (1-\rho_0^2)^{\frac{N}{2}} (\sigma^2)^N} \exp\left(-\frac{a_{11}/\tau - 2\rho_0 a_{12} + \tau a_{22}}{2\sigma^2 (1-\rho_0^2)}\right)$$
(11)

The maximum of (11) with respect to  $\tau$  occurs at

$$\hat{\tau} = \sqrt{a_{11}/a_{22}},$$

then the concentrated likelihood is

$$\frac{1}{(2\pi)^N (1-\rho_0^2)^{\frac{N}{2}} (\sigma^2)^N} \exp\left(-\frac{\sqrt{a_{11}}\sqrt{a_{22}} (1-\rho_0 r)}{\sigma^2 (1-\rho_0^2)}\right). \tag{12}$$

The maximum of (12) occurs at

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{\sqrt{a_{11}}\sqrt{a_{22}}(1-\rho_0 r)}{N(1-\rho_0^2)},$$

which is because of  $f(x) = \exp(-b/x)/x^N$  leads to

$$f'(x) = \frac{\exp(-\frac{b}{x}) \cdot \frac{b}{x^2} \cdot x^N - \exp(-\frac{b}{x}) \cdot Nx^{N-1}}{x^{2N}} = \frac{\exp(-\frac{b}{x})x^{N-2}(b - Nx)}{x^{2N}}.$$

The likelihood ratio criterion is, therefore,

$$\frac{\sup_{\omega} L(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})}{\sup_{\Omega} L(\mathbf{x}, \boldsymbol{\theta})} = \left(\frac{(1 - \rho_0^2)(1 - r^2)}{(1 - \rho_0 r)^2}\right)^{\frac{N}{2}}.$$

Lemma 5.2. For random vector

$$\mathbf{x} = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ \vdots \\ x_p \end{bmatrix} \sim \mathcal{N}(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}),$$

where

$$\boldsymbol{\mu} = \begin{bmatrix} \mu_1 \\ \vdots \\ \mu_p \end{bmatrix} \quad and \quad \boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} & \dots & \sigma_{1p} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} & \dots & \sigma_{2p} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \sigma_{n1} & \sigma_{n2} & \dots & \sigma_{nn} \end{bmatrix}.$$

 $Then \ \mathbb{E}[(x_i-\mu_i)(x_j-\mu_j)(x_k-\mu_k)] = 0 \ and \ \mathbb{E}[(x_i-\mu_i)(x_j-\mu_j)(x_k-\mu_k)(x_l-\mu_l)] = \sigma_{ij}\sigma_{kl} + \sigma_{ik}\sigma_{jl} + \sigma_{il}\sigma_{jk}.$ 

## Theorem 5.4. Let

$$\mathbf{A}(n) = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}_{N}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}_{N})^{\top},$$

where  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independently distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and n = N - 1. Then the limiting distribution of

$$\mathbf{B}(n) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} (\mathbf{A}(n) - n\mathbf{\Sigma})$$

is normal with mean **0** and covariance  $\mathbb{E}[b_{ij}(n)b_{kl}(n)] = \sigma_{ik}\sigma_{jl} + \sigma_{il}\sigma_{jk}$ .

*Proof.* We have

$$\mathbf{A}(n) = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top},$$

where  $\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_n$  are distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ . We arrange the elements of  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$  in a vector such as

$$\mathbf{y}_{lpha} = egin{bmatrix} z_{1lpha}^2 \ z_{1lpha}z_{2lpha} \ dots \ z_{2lpha}^2 \ dots \ z_{2lpha} \ dots \ z_{plpha}^2 \end{bmatrix}.$$

The second moments of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}$  can be deduced from the forth moments of  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  by using Lemma 5.2, that is,

$$\mathbb{E}[z_{i\alpha}z_{j\alpha}] = \sigma_{ij}, \qquad \mathbb{E}[z_{i\alpha}z_{j\alpha}z_{k\alpha}z_{l\alpha}] = \sigma_{ij}\sigma_{kl} + \sigma_{ik}\sigma_{il} + \sigma_{il}\sigma_{ik},$$

and

$$\mathbb{E}[(z_{i\alpha}z_{j\alpha} - \sigma_{ij})(z_{k\alpha}z_{l\alpha} - \sigma_{kl})] = \sigma_{ik}\sigma_{jl} + \sigma_{il}\sigma_{jk}. \tag{13}$$

Arranging the elements of  $\Sigma$  and  $\mathbf{A}(n)$  as

$$\nu = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} \\ \sigma_{12} \\ \vdots \\ \sigma_{22} \\ \vdots \\ \sigma_{pp} \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{w}(n) = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11}(n) \\ a_{12}(n) \\ \vdots \\ a_{22}(n) \\ \vdots \\ a_{pp}(n) \end{bmatrix}$$

we obtain

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}(\mathbf{w}(n) - n\boldsymbol{\nu}) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} (\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} - \boldsymbol{\nu}).$$

Since  $\mathbb{E}[\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}] = \boldsymbol{\mu}$  and covariance of  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}$  satisfies (13), the multivariate central limit theorem implies the desired result.

**Remark 5.1.** In the analysis for the asymptotic distribution of sample correlation, we apply this theorem with

$$\mathbf{A}(n) = \mathbf{C}(n)$$
 and  $\mathbf{\Sigma} = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \rho \\ \rho & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ .

Then the covariance matrix of limiting distribution of the vector

$$\sqrt{n}(\mathbf{u}(n) - \mathbf{b}) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \begin{pmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} c_{ii}(n) \\ c_{jj}(n) \\ c_{ij}(n) \end{bmatrix} - n\mathbf{b} \end{pmatrix}$$

is

$$\begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11}\sigma_{11} + \sigma_{11}\sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12}\sigma_{12} + \sigma_{12}\sigma_{12} & \sigma_{11}\sigma_{12} + \sigma_{12}\sigma_{11} \\ \sigma_{12}\sigma_{12} + \sigma_{12}\sigma_{12} & \sigma_{22}\sigma_{22} + \sigma_{22}\sigma_{22} & \sigma_{21}\sigma_{22} + \sigma_{22}\sigma_{21} \\ \sigma_{11}\sigma_{12} + \sigma_{12}\sigma_{11} & \sigma_{21}\sigma_{22} + \sigma_{22}\sigma_{21} & \sigma_{11}\sigma_{22} + \sigma_{12}\sigma_{21} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2\rho^2 & 2\rho \\ 2\rho^2 & 2 & 2\rho \\ 2\rho & 2\rho & 1+\rho^2 \end{bmatrix}.$$

**Theorem 5.5.** Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{x}_N$  be a sample from  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$  and partition the variables as

$$\mathbf{x} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix}, \quad \boldsymbol{\mu} = \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(1)} \\ \boldsymbol{\mu}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \quad and \quad \boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \begin{bmatrix} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{11} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{12} \\ \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{21} & \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix}.$$

Define  $\mathbf{B} = \Sigma_{12}\Sigma_{22}^{-1}$ ,  $\Sigma_{11.2} = \Sigma_{11} - \Sigma_{12}\Sigma_{22}^{-1}\Sigma_{21}$ ,

$$\bar{\mathbf{x}} = \begin{bmatrix} \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(1)} \\ \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(1)} \\ \mathbf{x}_{\alpha}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix} \quad and \quad \mathbf{A} = \begin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A}_{11} & \mathbf{A}_{12} \\ \mathbf{A}_{21} & \mathbf{A}_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}.$$

Then the maximum likelihood estimators of  $\mu^{(1)}$ ,  $\mu^{(2)}$ , B,  $\Sigma_{11.2}$  and  $\Sigma_{22}$  are

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}^{(1)} = \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(1)}, \quad \hat{\boldsymbol{\mu}}^{(2)} = \bar{\mathbf{x}}^{(2)}, \quad \hat{\mathbf{B}} = \mathbf{A}_{12}\mathbf{A}_{22}^{-1},$$

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}_{11.2} = \frac{1}{N}(\mathbf{A}_{11} - \mathbf{A}_{12}\mathbf{A}_{22}^{-1}\mathbf{A}_{21}) \quad and \quad \hat{\boldsymbol{\Sigma}}_{22} = \frac{1}{N}\mathbf{A}_{22}.$$

*Proof.* The correspondence between  $\Sigma$  and  $(\Sigma_{11.2}, \mathbf{B}, \Sigma_{22})$  is one-by-one since

$$\Sigma_{12} = \mathbf{B}\Sigma_{22}$$
 and  $\Sigma_{11} = \Sigma_{11,2} + \mathbf{B}\Sigma_{22}\mathbf{B}^{\top}$ ,

which implies the desired result.

## 6 The Wishart Distribution

**Theorem 6.1.** Let  $\mathbf{z}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_n$  be independently distributed, each according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \Sigma)$ , where  $n \geq p$ ; let

$$\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top} = \mathbf{T}^* \mathbf{T}^{*\top},$$

where  $t_{ij}^* = 0$  for i < j, and  $t_{ii}^* > 0$  for  $i = 1, \dots, p$ . Then the density of  $\mathbf{T}^*$  is

$$\frac{\prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{*n-i} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{T}^{*} \mathbf{T}^{*\top}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}} \pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}} \left(\det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \prod_{i=1}^{p} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}.$$

Proof. Let  $\mathbf{C}$  be the lower triangular matrix  $(c_{ij} = 0, i < j)$  such that  $\mathbf{\Sigma} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{C}^{\top}$  and  $c_{ii} > 0$ . Define  $\mathbf{y}_{\alpha} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  for  $\alpha = 1, \dots, n$ , which are be independently distributed, each according to  $\mathcal{N}_{p}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{I})$ . We have  $\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*}^{\top} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{C}\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{\top} = \mathbf{C}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{T}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{\top}$ . Let  $\mathbf{T} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{T}^{*}$ , then the matrix  $\mathbf{T}$  is the lower triangular with  $t_{ii} > 0$  and we have

$$\mathbf{T}\mathbf{T}^{\top} = \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*^{\top}}\mathbf{C}^{-1} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\mathbf{C}^{-1} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{y}_{\alpha}\mathbf{y}_{\alpha}^{\top}.$$

The lemma in slides have shown that random variables  $t_{i1}, \ldots, t_{ii-1}$  are independently distributed and  $t_{ij}$  is distributed according to  $\mathcal{N}(0,1)$  for i > j; and  $t_{ii}$  has the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with n-i+1 degrees of freedom. Hence, the density of  $w = t_{ii}^2$  is

$$\frac{1}{2^{\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}w^{\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)-1}\exp\left(-\frac{w}{2}\right)$$

and the density of  $t_{ii} = \sqrt{w}$  is (using  $dw/dt_{ii} = 2t_{ii}$ )

$$\frac{1}{2^{\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}(t_{ii}^2)^{\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)-1}\exp\left(-\frac{t_{ii}^2}{2}\right)\cdot(2t_{ii}) = \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n-i-1}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}t_{ii}^{n-i}\exp\left(-\frac{t_{ii}^2}{2}\right)$$

Then the joint density of  $t_{ij}$  for j = 1, ..., i, i = 1, ..., p is

$$\begin{split} &\prod_{i=1}^{p} \prod_{j=1}^{i-1} \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t_{ij}^{2}\right)}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \cdot \prod_{i=1}^{p} \frac{t_{ii}^{n-i} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}t_{ii}^{2}\right)}{2^{\frac{n-i-1}{2}}} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right) \\ &= \prod_{i=1}^{p} \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{j=1}^{i-1}t_{ij}^{2}\right)}{(2\pi)^{\frac{i-1}{2}}} \cdot \prod_{i=1}^{p} \frac{t_{ii}^{n-i} \exp\left(-\frac{t_{ii}^{2}}{2}\right)}{2^{\frac{n-i-1}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)} \\ &= \prod_{i=1}^{p} \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{j=1}^{i}t_{ij}^{2}\right)t_{ii}^{n-i}}{2^{\frac{n-i-1}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)} \\ &= \frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p}\sum_{j=1}^{i}t_{ij}^{2}\right)\prod_{i=1}^{p}t_{ii}^{n-i}}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}}\pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}}\prod_{j=1}^{p}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}. \end{split}$$

The Jacobian of the transformation from  ${\bf T}$  to  ${\bf T}^*={\bf CT}$  can be written as

$$\begin{bmatrix} t_{11}^* \\ t_{21}^* \\ t_{22}^* \\ \vdots \\ t_{p1}^* \\ \vdots \\ t_{pp}^* \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} c_{11} & 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \times & c_{22} & 0 & \cdots & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \times & \times & c_{22} & \cdots & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \times & \times & \times & \cdots & c_{pp} & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \times & \times & \times & \times & \cdots & c_{pp} & \cdots & c_{pp} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} t_{11} \\ t_{21} \\ t_{22} \\ \vdots \\ t_{p1} \\ \vdots \\ t_{pp} \end{bmatrix} .$$

Since the matrix of the transformation is triangular, its determinant is the product of the diagonal elements, namely,  $\prod_{i=1}^{p} c_{ii}^{i}$ . The Jacobian of the transformation from **T** to **T**\* is the reciprocal of the determinant. We also have  $t_{ii} = t_{ii}^{*}/c_{ii}$ ,  $\prod_{i=1}^{p} c_{ii}^{2} = \det(\mathbf{C}) \det(\mathbf{C}^{\top}) = \det(\mathbf{\Sigma})$  and

$$\sum_{i=1}^{p} \sum_{j=1}^{i} t_{ij}^{2} = \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{T}\mathbf{T}^{\top}\right) = \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{C}^{-1}\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\mathbf{C}^{-\top}\right)$$
$$= \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\mathbf{C}^{-\top}\mathbf{C}^{-1}\right) = \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)$$

Then the density of  $\mathbf{T}^*$  is

$$\begin{split} &\frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}\left(\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)\prod_{i=1}^{p}(t_{ii}^{*}/c_{ii})^{n-i}}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}}\pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}\cdot\left(\prod_{i=1}^{p}c_{ii}^{i}\right)^{-1} \\ &=\frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}\left(\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)\prod_{i=1}^{p}t_{ii}^{*}^{n-i}}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}}\pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}\cdot\left(\prod_{i=1}^{p}c_{ii}\right)^{n} \\ &=\frac{\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}\left(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1}\mathbf{T}^{*}\mathbf{T}^{*\top}\right)\right)\prod_{i=1}^{p}t_{ii}^{*}^{n-i}}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}}\pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}}\left(\det(\boldsymbol{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}. \end{split}$$

**Theorem 6.2.** Let  $\mathbf{z}_1, \dots, \mathbf{z}_n$  be independently distributed, each according to  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ , where  $n \geq p$ . Then the density of  $\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \mathbf{z}_\alpha \mathbf{z}_\alpha^\top$  is

$$\frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathrm{tr}\left(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\mathbf{A}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{np}{2}}\pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}}\left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}$$

for A positive definite, and 0 otherwise.

*Proof.* Following the proof of Theorem 6.1, we only needs to consider the transformation from  $\mathbf{T}^*$  to  $\mathbf{A}$ . The relation  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{T}^* \mathbf{T}^{*\top}$  means we can write

$$a_{hi} = \sum_{i=1}^{i} t_{hj}^{*} t_{ij}^{*}$$
 for  $h \ge i$ .

Then we have

$$\frac{\partial a_{hi}}{\partial t_{kl}^*} = 0 \quad \text{for } k > h; \text{ or } k = h, l > i.$$

that is,  $\partial a_{hi}/\partial t_{kl}^*=0$  if k,l, is beyond h,i in the lexicographic ordering. The Jacobian matrix of the transformation from  $\bf A$  to  $\bf T^*$  is a lower triangular matrix with diagonal elements

$$\frac{\partial a_{hh}}{\partial t_{hh}^*} = 2t_{hh}^* \quad \text{for } h = 1, \dots, p;$$

$$\frac{\partial a_{hi}}{\partial t_{hi}^*} = t_{ii}^* \quad \text{for } h > i;$$

The determinant of the Jacobian matrix is therefore

$$2^{p} \prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{* p+1-i}$$

The Jacobian of the transformation from  $\mathbf{T}^*$  to  $\mathbf{A}$  is the reciprocal. Hence, the desnity of  $\mathbf{A}$  is

$$\frac{\prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{* n-i} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{A})\right)}{2^{\frac{p(n-2)}{2}} \pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \prod_{i=1}^{p} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)} \cdot \left(2^{p} \prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{* p+1-i}\right)^{-1} \\
= \frac{\prod_{i=1}^{p} t_{ii}^{* n-p-1} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{A})\right)}{2^{\frac{pn}{2}} \pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \prod_{i=1}^{p} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)} \\
= \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{A})\right)}{2^{\frac{pn}{2}} \pi^{\frac{p(p-1)}{4}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \prod_{i=1}^{p} \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2}(n+1-i)\right)}.$$

Corollary 6.1. Let  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  be independently distributed, each according to  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , where N > p. Then the distribution of  $\mathbf{S} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\alpha=1}^{N} (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}}) (\mathbf{x}_{\alpha} - \bar{\mathbf{x}})^{\top}$  is  $\mathcal{W}\left(\frac{1}{n}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}, n\right)$ .

*Proof.* The matrix S has the distribution of

$$\mathbf{S} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \frac{\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}}{\sqrt{n}} \left( \frac{\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{\top},$$

where each  $\frac{\mathbf{z}_1}{\sqrt{n}}, \dots, \frac{\mathbf{z}_n}{\sqrt{n}}$  are independently distributed, each according to  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \frac{1}{n}\Sigma)$ . Theorem 6.2 implies this corollary.

**Lemma 6.1.** Given **B** positive semidefinite and **A** positive definite, there exists a non-singular matrix **F** such that  $\mathbf{F}^{\top}\mathbf{BF} = \mathbf{D}$  and  $\mathbf{F}^{\top}\mathbf{AF} = \mathbf{I}$ , where **D** is diagonal.

*Proof.* Let the spectral decomposition of  $\mathbf{A}$  be  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{A}} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{A}}^{\top}$  and  $\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{A}} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\mathbf{A}}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ , then  $\mathbf{E}^{\top} \mathbf{A} \mathbf{E} = \mathbf{I}$ . Let the spectral decomposition of  $\mathbf{B}^* = \mathbf{E}^{\top} \mathbf{B} \mathbf{E}$  be  $\mathbf{B}^* = \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*} \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\mathbf{B}^*} \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*}^{\top}$ , then

$$\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\mathbf{B}^*} = \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*}^{\top}\mathbf{B}^*\mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*} = \mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*}^{\top}\mathbf{E}^{\top}\mathbf{B}\mathbf{E}\mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*}.$$

Letting  $\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{E}\mathbf{U}_{\mathbf{B}^*}$  and  $\mathbf{D} = \mathbf{\Sigma}_{\mathbf{B}^*}$  proves this lemma.

**Lemma 6.2.** The characteristic function of chi-square distribution with the degree of freedom n is

$$\phi(t) = (1 - 2it)^{-\frac{n}{2}}.$$

*Proof.* Let x be distributed according to  $\chi^2$ -distribution with the degree of freedom n, then its density is

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} x^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{x}{2}\right).$$

We have (using the density of  $\chi^2$ -distribution with the degree of freedom 2k + n)

$$\begin{split} \phi(t) = & \mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}tx)\right] \\ = & \int_{0}^{+\infty} \exp(\mathrm{i}tx) \cdot \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} x^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{x}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{+\infty} \left(\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\mathrm{i}tx)^{k}}{k!}\right) x^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{x}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\mathrm{i}t)^{k}}{k!} \int_{0}^{+\infty} x^{k+\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{x}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\mathrm{i}t)^{k}}{k!} \cdot 2^{k+\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(k+\frac{n}{2}\right) \int_{0}^{+\infty} \frac{1}{2^{k+\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(k+\frac{n}{2}\right)} x^{k+\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{x}{2}\right) \, \mathrm{d}x \\ = & \frac{1}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\mathrm{i}t)^{k}}{k!} \cdot 2^{k+\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma\left(k+\frac{n}{2}\right) \\ = & 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{(2\mathrm{i}t)^{k}}{k!} \cdot \prod_{j=0}^{k-1} \left(j+\frac{n}{2}\right) \\ = & (1-2\mathrm{i}t)^{-\frac{n}{2}}. \end{split}$$

For the last step, we consider Taylor expansion on  $f(x) = (1-x)^{-\frac{n}{2}}$  at x=0, that is

$$f(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{f'(0)x^k}{k!} = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^k}{k!} \prod_{j=0}^{k-1} \left(j + \frac{n}{2}\right).$$

We take x = 2it.

**Theorem 6.3.** If  $\mathbf{z}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_n$  are independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ , then the characteristic function of  $a_{11}, \ldots, a_{pp}, 2a_{12}, \ldots, 2a_{p-1,p}$ , where  $a_{ij}$  is the (i, j)-th element of

$$\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$$

is given by  $\mathbb{E}\left[\exp(i\operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{A}\mathbf{\Theta}))\right] = \left(\det\left(\mathbf{I} - 2i\mathbf{\Theta}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)\right)^{-\frac{n}{2}}$ , where  $\mathbf{\Theta} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  is symmetric.

*Proof.* The characteristic function of  $a_{11}, \ldots, a_{pp}, 2a_{12}, \ldots, 2a_{p-1,p}$  is

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\exp(\mathrm{i}\operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{A}\boldsymbol{\Theta}))\right]$$

$$=\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\right)\right)\right]$$

$$=\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\operatorname{tr}\left(\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}\right)\right)\right]$$

$$=\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}\right)\right]$$

$$=\prod_{\alpha=1}^{n}\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}\right)\right]$$

$$=(\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\mathbf{z}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\mathbf{z}\right)\right])^{n},$$

where  $\mathbf{z} \sim \mathcal{N}_p(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ . Lemma 6.1 means there exists non-singular matrix  $\mathbf{F}$  such that

$$\mathbf{F}^{\mathsf{T}} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{F} = \mathbf{I} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{F}^{\mathsf{T}} \mathbf{\Theta} \mathbf{F} = \mathbf{D},$$

where  $\mathbf{D} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$  is diagonal. If we set  $\mathbf{z} = \mathbf{F}\mathbf{y}$ , then

$$\mathbb{E} \left[ \exp \left( \mathbf{i} \, \mathbf{z}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Theta} \mathbf{z} \right) \right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp \left( \mathbf{i} \, \mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{F}^{\top} \boldsymbol{\Theta} \mathbf{F} \mathbf{y} \right) \right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp \left( \mathbf{i} \, \mathbf{y}^{\top} \mathbf{D} \mathbf{y} \right) \right]$$

$$= \mathbb{E} \left[ \prod_{j=1}^{p} \exp \left( \mathbf{i} \, d_{jj} y_{j}^{2} \right) \right]$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{p} \mathbb{E} \left[ \exp \left( \mathbf{i} \, d_{jj} y_{j}^{2} \right) \right].$$

Note that the term of  $\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,d_{jj}y_j^2\right)\right]$  is the characteristic function of the  $\chi^2$ -distribution with one degree of freedom, namely  $(1-2\mathrm{i}d_{jj})^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ . Thus, we have

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\exp\left(\mathrm{i}\,\mathbf{z}^{\top}\boldsymbol{\Theta}\mathbf{z}\right)\right] = \prod_{j=1}^{p} (1 - 2\mathrm{i}d_{jj})^{-\frac{1}{2}} = (\det(\mathbf{I} - 2\mathrm{i}\mathbf{D}))^{-\frac{1}{2}}.$$

We also have

$$\det(\mathbf{I} - 2i\mathbf{D})$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{F}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{F} - 2i\mathbf{F}^{\top} \mathbf{\Theta} \mathbf{F})$$

$$= \det(\mathbf{F}^{\top} (\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} - 2i\mathbf{\Theta}) \mathbf{F})$$

$$= (\det(\mathbf{F}))^{2} \det(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} - 2i\mathbf{\Theta})$$

and  $\mathbf{F}^{\top} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{F} = \mathbf{I}$  means  $\det(\mathbf{F}) = (\det(\mathbf{\Sigma}))^{\frac{1}{2}}$ . Combing the above results, we obtain

$$det(\mathbf{I} - 2i\mathbf{D}) = det(\mathbf{\Sigma}) det(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} - 2i\mathbf{\Theta}) = det(\mathbf{I} - 2i\mathbf{\Theta}\mathbf{\Sigma})$$

and

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\exp(i\operatorname{tr}(\mathbf{A}\boldsymbol{\Theta}))\right] = \left(\det\left(\mathbf{I} - 2i\boldsymbol{\Theta}\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\right)\right)^{-\frac{n}{2}}.$$

**Theorem 6.4.** Let **A** and  $\Sigma$  be partitioned into q and p-q rows and columns,

$$\mathbf{A} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A}_{11} & \mathbf{A}_{12} \ \mathbf{A}_{21} & \mathbf{A}_{22} \end{bmatrix}, \qquad \mathbf{\Sigma} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{11} & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{12} \ \mathbf{\Sigma}_{21} & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{22} \end{bmatrix}$$

If **A** is distributed according to  $W(\Sigma, n)$ , then **A**<sub>11</sub> is distributed according to  $W(\Sigma_{11}, n)$ .

*Proof.* The assumption means **A** is distributed as  $\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\top}$ , where the  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  are independent, each with the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ . Partition  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  into subvectors of q and p-q components such that

$$\mathbf{z}_{lpha} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{z}_{lpha}^{(1)} \ \mathbf{z}_{lpha}^{(2)} \end{bmatrix}.$$

Then  $\mathbf{z}_1^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(n)}$  are independent, each with the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma}_{11})$ , and  $\mathbf{A}_{11}$  is distributed as

$$\sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(1)} \big(\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(1)}\big)^{\top},$$

which has the distribution  $\mathcal{W}(\Sigma_{11}, n)$ .

**Theorem 6.5.** Let **A** and  $\Sigma$  be partitioned into  $p_1, \ldots, p_q$  rows and columns with  $p = p_1, \ldots, p_q$ ,

$$\mathbf{A} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{A}_{11} & \cdots & \mathbf{A}_{1q} \ dots & \ddots & dots \ \mathbf{A}_{q1} & \cdots & \mathbf{A}_{qq} \end{bmatrix}, \qquad \mathbf{\Sigma} = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{\Sigma}_{11} & \cdots & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{1q} \ dots & \ddots & dots \ \mathbf{\Sigma}_{q1} & \cdots & \mathbf{\Sigma}_{qq} \end{bmatrix}$$

If  $\Sigma = \mathbf{0}$  for  $i \neq j$  and if  $\mathbf{A} \sim \mathcal{W}(\Sigma, n)$ , then  $\mathbf{A}_{11}, \ldots, \mathbf{A}_{qq}$  are independently distributed and  $\mathbf{A}_{jj} \sim \mathcal{W}(\Sigma_{jj}, n)$  for  $j = 1, \ldots, q$ .

*Proof.* The assumption means **A** is distributed as  $\mathbf{A} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^{n} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha} \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{\mathsf{T}}$ , where the  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  are independent, each with the distribution  $\mathcal{N}(\mathbf{0}, \mathbf{\Sigma})$ . Partition  $\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}$  into subvectors

$$\mathbf{z}_lpha = egin{bmatrix} \mathbf{z}_lpha^{(1)} \ dots \ \mathbf{z}_lpha^{(q)} \end{bmatrix}.$$

as  $\mathbf{A}$  and  $\mathbf{\Sigma}$  be portioned. Since  $\mathbf{\Sigma}_{ij} = \mathbf{0}$ , the sets  $\mathbf{z}_1^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_n^{(1)}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_1^{(q)}, \dots, \mathbf{z}_n^{(q)}$  are independent. Then  $\mathbf{A}_{11} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(1)} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(1)}\right)^{\top}, \dots, \mathbf{A}_{qq} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(q)} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\alpha}^{(q)}\right)^{\top}$  are independent. The rest of the proof follows from Theorem 6.4.

**Theorem 6.6.** If  $\mathbf{x}_1, \dots, \mathbf{x}_N$  are independent, each with distribution  $\mathcal{N}_p(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ , where

$$\Sigma = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & \sigma_{22} & \cdots & \cdots \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & \sigma_{pp} \end{bmatrix}$$

then the density of the sample correlation coefficients is given by

$$\frac{\left(\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)\right)^{p}\left(\det\left(\left[r_{ij}\right]_{ij}\right)\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}}{\Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)}.$$

where n = N - 1.

*Proof.* The density of  $\mathbf{A}$  is

$$\frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p}\frac{a_{ii}}{\sigma_{ii}}\right)}{2^{\frac{np}{2}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\sigma_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)}.$$

We consider the transformation

1. 
$$a_{ij} = \sqrt{a_{ii}} \sqrt{a_{jj}} r_{ij}$$
 for  $i < j$ ,

2.  $a_{ii} = a_{ii}$  otherwise,

which is from

$$\{r_{ij} : i < j, i, j = 1, \dots, p\} \cup \{a_{ii} : i = 1, \dots, p\}$$

to

$${a_{ij}: i < j, i, j = 1, \dots, p} \cup {a_{ii}: i = 1, \dots, p}.$$

The determinant of Jacobian for this transformation is

$$\prod_{i=1}^{p} \prod_{j=1}^{i-1} \sqrt{a_{ii}} \sqrt{a_{jj}} = \prod_{i=1}^{p} a_{ii}^{\frac{p-1}{2}}.$$

The joint density of  $\{r_{ij} : i < j, i, j = 1, ..., p\} \cup \{a_{ii} : i = 1, ..., p\}$  is

$$\begin{split} &\frac{\left(\det\left(\left[\sqrt{a_{ii}}\sqrt{a_{jj}}\,r_{ij}\right]_{ij}\right)\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p}\frac{a_{ii}}{\sigma_{ii}}\right)}{2^{\frac{np}{2}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\sigma_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)}\cdot\prod_{i=1}^{p}a_{ii}^{\frac{p-1}{2}}\\ &=\frac{\left(\prod_{i=1}^{p}a_{ii}\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}\left(\det\left(\left[r_{ij}\right]_{ij}\right)\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{i=1}^{p}\frac{a_{ii}}{\sigma_{ii}}\right)}{2^{\frac{np}{2}}\prod_{i=1}^{p}\sigma_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}}\Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)}\cdot\prod_{i=1}^{p}a_{ii}^{\frac{p-1}{2}}\\ &=\frac{\left(\det\left(\left[r_{ij}\right]_{ij}\right)\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}}{\Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)}\cdot\prod_{i=1}^{p}\frac{a_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}-1}\exp\left(-\frac{a_{ii}}{2\sigma_{ii}}\right)}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\sigma_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}}},\end{split}$$

where  $r_{ii} = 1$ . Let  $u_i = a_{ii}/(2\sigma_{ii})$ , then

$$\int_0^\infty \frac{a_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-\frac{a_{ii}}{2\sigma_{ii}}\right)}{2^{\frac{n}{2}}\sigma_{ii}^{\frac{n}{2}}} da_{ii} = \int_0^\infty u_i^{\frac{n}{2}-1} \exp\left(-u_i\right) du_i = \Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right).$$

Combing all above results proves this theorem.

**Theorem 6.7.** If **A** has the distribution  $W(\Sigma, n)$  and  $\Sigma$  has the a prior distribution  $W^{-1}(\Psi, m)$ , then the conditional distribution of  $\Sigma$  given **A** is the inverted Wishart distribution  $W^{-1}(\mathbf{A} + \Psi, n + m)$ .

*Proof.* The joint density of **A** and  $\Sigma$ ,

$$f(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{\Sigma}) = \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{A}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{np}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)} \cdot \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{\frac{m}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{-\frac{m+p+1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}\left(\mathbf{\Psi} \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{mp}{2}} \Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)}$$

$$= \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{\frac{m}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{-\frac{n+m+p+1}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}\left((\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi}) \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{(m+n)p}{2}} \Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{n}{2}\right) \Gamma_{p}\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)}$$

$$(14)$$

for **A** and  $\Sigma$  are positive definite. The marginal density of **A** is the integral of (14) over the set of  $\Sigma$  positive definite. Since

$$1 = \int w^{-1}(\mathbf{\Sigma} \mid \mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi}, n + m) d\mathbf{\Sigma}$$

$$= \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{\frac{n+m}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{-\frac{n+m+p+1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\operatorname{tr}\left((\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi})\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{(m+n)p}{2}} \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n+m}{2}\right)},$$

we have

$$\begin{split} f(\mathbf{A}) &= \int f(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{\Sigma}) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{\Sigma} \\ &= \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{\frac{m}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}}{\Gamma_{p} \left(\frac{n}{2}\right) \Gamma_{p} \left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} \int \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{\Sigma})\right)^{-\frac{n+m+p+1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{tr} \left((\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi}) \mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{(m+n)p}{2}}} \mathrm{d}\mathbf{\Sigma} \\ &= \frac{\left(\det(\mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{\frac{m}{2}} \left(\det(\mathbf{A})\right)^{\frac{n-p-1}{2}}}{\Gamma_{p} \left(\frac{n}{2}\right) \Gamma_{p} \left(\frac{m}{2}\right)} \cdot \Gamma_{p} \left(\frac{n+m}{2}\right) \left(\det(\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi})\right)^{-\frac{n+m}{2}}. \end{split}$$

Then

$$f(\mathbf{\Sigma} \mid \mathbf{A}) = \frac{f(\mathbf{\Sigma}, \mathbf{A})}{f(\mathbf{A})}$$

$$= \frac{(\det(\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi}))^{\frac{n+m}{2}} (\det(\mathbf{\Sigma}))^{-\frac{n+m+p+1}{2}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{tr}\left((\mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi})\mathbf{\Sigma}^{-1}\right)\right)}{2^{\frac{(m+n)p}{2}} \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n+m}{2}\right)}$$

$$= w^{-1}(\mathbf{\Sigma} \mid \mathbf{A} + \mathbf{\Psi}, n+m).$$